

SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN THE BIBLE

Advanced Spiritual Warfare Training From a Biblical, Evangelical Perspective

*"He (Christ) will crush your head, and you (Satan) will strike His heel"
(Genesis 3:15)*

Copyright © 2012

As you read through this document you will come to places where I have placed questions. If you are able please answer the questions and email me your answers. I will check them and see if there are any suggestions or help I can give you. Write me at Jerry Schmoyer, jerry@schmoyer.net. If you have any questions about anything you read please feel free to email me and I will answer them. May God bless you and teach you by His Spirit.

I. OLD TESTAMENT

II. LIFE OF JESUS

III. NEW TESTAMENT

IV. CHURCH HISTORY

Rev. Dr. Jerry Schmoyer

SW.ChristianTrainingOrganization.org

India.ChristianTrainingOrganization.org

jerry@schmoyer.net

© Copyright 2011

Think about these questions and how they apply to you. Email me your answers, jerry@schmoyer.net. It will help me get to know you better and I will write back with suggestions or comments to help you. Also send me any questions you have. I'd enjoy hearing what God is teaching you.

In a few sentences tell about when you accepted the Lord as your Savior.

Have you ever having been involved in spiritual warfare? Summarize what happened.

SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN THE BIBLE

INDEX p iii-v

SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN THE BIBLE INTRODUCTION p vi

I. OLD TESTAMENT p 1-30

A. CREATED BEINGS p 1-2

1. GOD'S PLAN TO CREATE (Ephesians 1:4) p 1-2
2. CREATION OF ANGELS (Job 38:6-7) p 2
3. CREATION OF HUMAN BEINGS (Genesis 1:27 – 2:7) p 2

B. SIN ENTERS p 2-5

1. ANGELIC BEINGS SIN (Isaiah 14:12-15; Ezekiel 28:15-17) p 2
2. SIN ENTERS THE HUMAN RACE (Genesis 3:1-7) p 3-5
3. THE BATTLE BEGINS (Genesis 3:8-15) p 5

C. ADAM TO ABRAHAM p 6-10

1. CAIN & ABLE (Genesis 4:1-8) p 6
2. TIME OF NOAH (Genesis 6:1-8) p 6-7
3. NIMROD & BABEL (Genesis 11:1-9) p 8
4. JOB (Job 1:6-12; 2:1-7) p 9-11

Spiritual warfare training questions. P 10

D. FORMATION OF ISRAEL p 11-22

1. ABRAHAM (Genesis 11 – 24) p 11
2. ISAAC, JACOB, JOSEPH (Genesis 25 - 50) p 11-12
3. MOSES (Exodus - Deuteronomy) p 12-16
4. JOSHUA (Joshua) p 18-20
5. JUDGES (Judges) p 21-22

Spiritual warfare training questions. P 17

E. UNITED KINGDOM p 22-24

1. SAUL (1 Samuel 1-15) p 22-23
2. DAVID (1 Kings 16-1 Kings 2) p 23-24
3. SOLOMON (1 Kings 2 – 11) p 24

Spiritual warfare training questions. P 24

F. DIVIDED KINGDOM p 25-30

1. ISRAEL & JUDAH (1 Kings 12 – 2 Kings 24) p 25-27
2. CAPTIVITY (2 Kings 25, Jeremiah, Daniel) p 27-29

Spiritual warfare training questions. p 30

II. LIFE OF JESUS p 31-60

A. BIRTH OF JESUS p 31

1. 400 SILENT YEARS p 31
2. JESUS' BIRTH (Matthew 1-2; Luke 1-2) p 31

B. JESUS GOES PUBLIC p 32-35

1. JESUS' BAPTISM (Matthew 3:1-17) p 32
2. JESUS' TEMPTATION (Matthew 4:1-11) p 32-35

C. SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN JESUS' MINISTRY p 35-58

1. JESUS' FIRST DELIVERANCE (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37) p 35-38
Spiritual warfare traininG questions. p38
2. TEST OF TRUE DISCIPLESHIP (Matthew 7:21-23) p 39
3. FILLING THE HOUSE (Matthew 12:43-45) p 39-40
4. SNATCHING TRUTH AWAY (Mark 4:3-34; Mat 13:1-15; Luke 8:4-13) p 40
5. GADARENES DEMONIAK (Mark 5:1-20; Matthew 8:28-34; Lk 8:26-37) p 41-46
Spiritual warfare traininG questions. p 47
6. POWER & AUTHORITY GIVEN (Luke 9:1; 10:1,17-18) p 48-49
7. DEMONIZING OF CHILDREN (Matthew 15:21-28; Mark 7:24-30) p 50
8. DELIVERANCE FAILURE (Mat 17:14-19; Luke 9:37-45; Mark 9:14-29) p 50-51
9. THOSE WHO DO IT DIFFERENTLY (Mark 9:38-40; Luke 9:49-50) p 52
Spiritual warfare training questions. P 52
10. AUTHORITY TO BIND, LOOSE (Mat 16:13-19; Mk 8:27-29; Lk 9:18-20) p 53
11. SATAN ATTACKS THRU OTHERS (Mt 16:21-23; Lk 9:22-27) p 53-54
12. JUDAS IS SATANIZED (John 6:70) p 54
13. LAYING ON OF HANDS (Luke 13:10-17) p 54-58

D. SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN JESUS' FINAL WEEK p 58-60

1. JUDAS IS SATAN-INDWELT (Luke 22:3-4) p 58
2. TWO DECREES AGAINST SATAN (John 12:31; 16:7-11) p 58
3. SATAN DEFEATED ON THE CROSS (Hebrews 2:14-15) p58-59
4. SATAN DEFEATED BY THE RESURRECTION (Ephesians 4:8) p 59

CONCLUSION TO THE LIFE OF JESUS p 59-60

- REFERENCES TO THE SPIRIT WORLD IN THE GOSPELS p 60
Spiritual warfare training questions p 60

III. NEW TESTAMENT p 61-108

A. EVENTS (Acts) p 63-75

1. PENTECOST AND AFTER (Acts 1-4) p 63
2. ANANIAS & SAPPHIRA (Acts 5) p 64-65
3. PETER'S SHADOW DELIVERS (Acts 5) p 66
4. MANY HEALED & DELIVERED (Acts 8:1-8) p 67-68
5. SIMON MAGUS (Acts 8) p 68
6. BAR-JESUS (ELYMAS) (Acts 13) p 69
7. PHILIPPI MEDIUM (Acts 16:16-18) p 70-71
8. IDOLATRY ATHENS, CORINTH (Acts 17) p 71
9. PAUL AT EPHEBUS (Acts 19) p 71-75
Spiritual warfare training questions p 75

B. PAUL'S WRITINGS (Epistles) p 75-103

1. GALATIANS p 75-76
2. 1 THESSALONIANS p 76-78
3. 2 THESSALONIANS p 78
4. 1 CORINTHIANS p 78-82
5. 2 CORINTHIANS p 82-85
6. ROMANS p 85-86
7. EPHESIANS p 86-89
Spiritual warfare training questions p 89

OUR GOD-GIVEN ARMOR FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE p 90-101

BACKGROUND TO THE ARMOR OF GOD p 90- 91

THE HELMET OF SALVATION (Ephesians 6:17) p 91-92

BREASTPLATE of RIGHTEOUSNESS (Ephesians 6:14) p 92-93

BELT of TRUTH (Ephesians 6:14) p 93

SANDALS of PEACE (Ephesians 6:15) p 93-95

SHIELD of FAITH (Ephesians 6:16) p 95-96

SWORD of the SPIRIT - WORD OF GOD (Ephesians 6:17) p 96-

USE THE WORD OF GOD p 96-97

PROMISES RELATED TO SPIRITUAL WARFARE p 97-98

PRAYER (Ephesians 6:18) p 98

PRAYER OF THE ARMOR OF GOD p 99-100

Spiritual warfare training questions p 101

8. COLOSSIANS p 102

9. 1 TIMOTHY p 102-103

10. 2 TIMOTHY p 103

C. PETER'S WRITINGS (Epistles) p 103-104

1. 1 PETER p 103-104

2. 2 PETER p 104

D. MISC WRITINGS (Epistles) p 104-107

1. JAMES p 104-105

2. HEBREWS p 105

3. JUDE p 105

4. 1 JOHN p 105-106

5. REVELATION p 106-107

ACTS & EPISTLES REFERENCES TO THE SPIRIT WORLD p 107

Spiritual warfare training questions p 108

IV. CHURCH HISTORY p 109-119

A. CHURCH FATHERS (100-500 AD) p 109-111

B. MIDDLE AGES (500-1300 AD) p 112

C. RENAISSANCE PERIOD (AD 1300-1500) p 113-114

D. REFORMATION PERIOD (1500-1700 AD) p 114-115

E. ENLIGHTENMENT PERIOD (AD 1700-1800) p 115-116

The change of the tide (16th-19th centuries) p 116

F. 19TH CENTURY (1800-1900 AD) p 117

G. 20TH CENTURY (1900-2000 AD) p 117-118

1. "EXORCISM" IN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH p 117

2. DELIVERANCE IN EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH p117

3. DELIVERANCE IN THE PROTESTANT CHURCHES p 118

Spiritual warfare training questions p 119

SUBJECT INDEX p 120-124

BIBLE PASSAGES – BIBLICAL ORDER p 124-125

BIBLE PASSAGES – ALPHABETICAL ORDER p 125-126

SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN THE BIBLE

By Rev. Dr. Jerry Schmoyer jerry@schmoyer.net
<http://www.mainstreetbaptist.org/> - <http://india.mainstreetbaptist.org/>

Warfare. Who wants it? Very few seek out and enjoy a battle. Those who do are usually considered a bit strange. Yet that's what the Christian life is all about. When we join God's army and desert Satan's forces we better be ready to fight to retain our freedom. Salvation is secure, but triumph in daily life only comes through warfare, spiritual warfare. It's nothing new, its always been around, even before Adam and Eve were created. It's always been with us and will be until Jesus returns. We battle the world, the flesh and Satan and his forces.

Since Adam and Eve allowed sin to enter Satan has been the ruler of this world system (John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; Epheisans 6:10-13). The coming of Jesus was the invasion of the kingdom of Satan by the kingdom of God in the person of the King of Kings and Lord of Lords, Jesus Christ (Matthew 12:28-29). But it was a subtle invasion, and infiltration behind enemy lines which brought the powers of evil to bear against it. Jesus is gone but His people now continue this work. We are bringing light to a dark world, and the darkness does all it can to resist the light. The world we live in is still under the control of Satan (I John 5:19). We are implanted here to disrupt enemy operations and rescue as many as we can who are chained in bondage to darkness. That's what our warfare is all about. And it doesn't get easier as the last days approach and the end is near.

Yet often God's people are unaware of this battle and take by surprise when they realize the warfare they are in. Often we are ignorant and unprepared to defend ourselves, much less rescue others (2 Corinthians 2:5-11). The purpose of this book is to help God's people better understand the battle and how to come out victorious. My Spiritual Warfare Handbook covers this subject topically, but there is a need for a resource that traces this battle through Scripture. The Bible is our textbook for life and victory. We need to know what it says to be equipped to fight and win. How else can we defend ourselves, much less reach out to free others?

Warfare. Who wants it? Not God's people. But it comes to us and is part of life. So the best thing to do is to train and prepare ourselves. It is my prayer and desire that this book will help with that as you understand the development of this warfare throughout God's Holy Word.

INTRODUCTION TO SPIRITUAL WAREFARE IN THE BIBLE

The book, "Spiritual Warfare History," is a follow-up to my earlier book, "Spiritual Warfare Handbook." The former is a basic treatment of spiritual warfare with information grouped and put in a progressive format. It is for beginners who are starting to learn about the subject.

This companion book is a more in depth treatment of the subject. It goes through the Bible and history, chronologically, from creation to the present, explaining and applying all the verses and teachings in the Bible about spiritual warfare. It can be read instead my "Spiritual Warfare Handbook" but because much more detail is given it will be harder for the beginner to glean the foundation principles needed to get started in spiritual warfare.

I. OLD TESTAMENT

By Rev. Dr. Jerry Schmoyer jerry@schmoyer.net
<http://www.mainstreetbaptist.org/> - <http://india.mainstreetbaptist.org/>

Spiritual warfare. It's always been with us. It didn't just start when Jesus came to earth. It's been with us since before the start of time. It started as soon as Satan rebelled and was sent out of heaven. As soon as they were created, Adam and Eve were attacked by Satan. It's been going on ever since. Therefore it's something we should know about, something we must understand. If we are in a battle with an enemy sworn to destroy us, we must know how he works and what we can do to defeat him and not be defeated by him. That's why we have the Bible. Spiritual warfare is one of the main themes in the Bible, the theme we will trace in this book. We'll start in the very beginning and trace spiritual warfare up to today.

A. CREATED BEINGS

1. GOD'S PLAN TO CREATE (Ephesians 1:4)

Some time before He created human beings, God created angels. He chose to create angels, and then human beings, with free will. He didn't want them or us to follow Him because we had no choice, because we were like robots. God wanted His created beings to relate to Him, to enjoy and to follow Him because we choose to. Thus His plan was to create angels and people with the ability to make free will choices.

When I was a young boy I had a wooden dog that I pulled with a string. That dog followed me everywhere when I pulled it along. It did whatever I made it do. It never disobeyed, never rebelled, never caused me any problems. Years later I got a real, live dog. Sometimes this dog would follow me, lick me and want to be with me, but other times it would disobey and cause difficulties and problems. The real dog wasn't nearly as well behaved as the wooden dog. But guess which dog I loved best? Yes, there's something special about a dog choosing to want to be with me, not 'having' to follow. God wanted those who followed Him to do so because they made that choice, not because there was no alternative. So God chose to make the beings He created have a free will choice to follow or not.

However, God knew that creating us with a free will choice would lead to a problem. Humans would use that choice to sin and rebel. Then, because God is holy and nothing sinful can be near Him, He would not be able to allow us in His presence. So, creating us with a will to choose would mean that He would have to condemn us to hell when we used that free will to sin. That would cause Him to lose our fellowship and presence with Him. But that is what He wanted in the first place.

That's when the plan was made to remedy the problem caused by our free will. God Himself would come to earth to die on the cross for our sins. He would become a man and be our substitute, thus enabling all who received this free grace gift to be with God forever.

Now man could have a free will choice, and still have fellowship with God. The only way to have both is through Jesus Christ's sacrifice on the cross. We call this "salvation" because it saves us from the consequences of losing fellowship with God. This great gift is available for any who will receive it by putting their faith in Jesus Christ as Savior.

This was a great plan, made before the creation of the world (Ephesians 1:4). But it would lead to an ongoing battle. We would constantly have to struggle against the tendency in us to sin, the impact of others who would tempt us to sin, and the influence of angelic beings who used their free will choice to rebel against God and oppose His kingdom. Warfare was inevitable.

2. CREATION OF ANGELS (Job 38:6-7)

Before mankind even entered this battle, however, warfare among created angelic beings began. God created angels before the world was created (Job 38:6-7). He created an “innumerable” number of angels (Hebrews 12:22; Rev 5:11). No angels have been created or destroyed since then. The original number has remained the same. People who die do NOT become angels. In eternity we have a position greater than the angels will have (I Corinthians 6:3). These created beings are like us in that we both were created in God’s image with personality (mind, will, and emotions). Angels have no physical body as we have, however. They are spirit beings.

3. CREATION OF HUMAN BEINGS (Genesis 1:27 – 2:7)

Later God also created us human beings as well. In many ways we are similar to angels, but He created us with a different role and purpose in mind. We, too, were created with a free will to decide if we wanted to follow God or not. While human and angelic beings were both created with a free will so they can willingly serve God and His Kingdom, humans were created to have a deeper love relationship with God (John 3:16) while angelic beings main purpose is to worship and serve Him (Hebrews 1:14). In fact, angels were created to minister to humans and assist us in our daily battles (Hebrews 1:14).

B. SIN ENTERS

1. ANGELIC BEINGS SIN (Isaiah 14:12-15; Ezekiel 28:15-17)

After creating angels, before human beings were created, God gave them an opportunity to exercise their free will choice. Up to this point all had voluntarily served God, but when Lucifer used his free will to choose not to each angelic About one third of the angelic beings rebelled against God’s authority (Revelation 12:4). It seems they followed one of God’s top-ranking angels (Ezekiel 28:12-15). Known as Lucifer, he was the highest angelic creation, the closest to the throne of God. However he didn’t want to serve God but wanted to be worshipped in place of God (II Thessalonians 2:4). His sin was pride, self-centeredness (Isaiah 14:12-15). God threw him out of heaven (Isaiah 14:12; Ezekiel 28:15-17; Luke 10:18). He lost all his position and privilege. With that rebellion, sin entered the universe. Lucifer is now called Satan and the fallen angels are called demons. As created beings they are limited in their knowledge and abilities. They do not have all knowledge or power as God does.

2. SIN ENTERS THE HUMAN RACE (Genesis 3:1-7)

Very shortly after Adam and Eve were created, their free will was tested as well. Satan twisted God's words and put doubt of God's goodness in Eve (Genesis 3:1). The battle started in their minds, and continues so today (2 Corinthians 10:3-5). He implied God was withholding something good from them, a lie he continues to use with good success even today.

While tracing the theme of spiritual warfare throughout the Bible, practical applications will be drawn showing how these truths apply to us today.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Sin has been described as "meeting a legitimate need in an illegitimate way." When we look for ways to meet our needs for peace, pleasure, comfort, support and satisfaction outside the plan and will of God we sin. Instead of waiting for God to provide for our needs in His way and time, we try to find a way to do that ourselves. Satan's lie that maybe God won't do it, or that God is withholding something good from us, still is successful today. He does the same thing today, putting doubts into our mind about why, if He loves us, God would allow pain, suffering, injustice, poverty, rejection, lack of mate or children, lack of job, etc. When we face trials or painful situations then doubts of God's goodness abound.

But God has proven His goodness by leaving heaven and going to the cross so we can spend eternity with Him. His goodness is no longer in question. We may not understand His plan or His timing, but we must trust that a God so good He would literally die for us certainly has our best interests in mind, whether we understand His workings or not (Matthew 7:10).

Thank God for the free will He gave you to choose to follow Him. Make choices today that would please Him. Choose to obey Him and love Him. You have a free will, and the only thing you can ever give God is your choice to serve Him. It's the best gift we can give. It's the only gift He wants from us!

Adam chose to believe Satan's lie and act on it, and thus sin entered into the human race (Romans 5:12). Humans, too, used their God-given free will choice to opt for sin. Immediately there were consequences: shame (Genesis 3:7) replaces innocence (Genesis 2:25), guilt and separation from God (Genesis 3:8, 22-24), deception and lies (Genesis 3:10), blaming each other (Genesis 3:12) and continuing consequences of sin in daily life (Genesis 3:16-24).

*LESSON FOR TODAY: Angels had a one-time free will choice and that decision is now locked for all eternity. They cannot change their choice. As human beings **we** have a chance to choose God throughout our lives on earth, but then when we die our choices are locked in, too, and cannot change. While alive God allows grace to give mankind another chance. Demons have no such alternative.*

LESSON FOR TODAY: When Satan challenged Eve she responded by getting into a debate. The trap was set (Genesis 3:1-6). Jesus, however, only responded to Satan's temptations by stating "it is written" (Matthew 4:10). When a demon puts a temptation or thought in your mind, or gives you an opportunity to sin, never discuss your options, think about it, try to talk yourself out of it, etc. Always respond with the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God (Ephesians 6:17).

When involved in deliverance with someone who is demonized, never allow the demon to speak out loud through the person. Never get into a debate or argument with them through thoughts they put in the person's mind. Never have any communication with them. For more details about this see under JESUS' FIRST DELIVERANCE (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Having gotten her to dialogue with him and having planted doubts about God's goodness in Eve's mind, Satan then denies the truth of God's Word (Genesis 3:4). Eve misquoted God, saying they couldn't even touch the fruit, when all God said was that they could not eat it (Genesis 3:3). Satan took advantage of her lack of correct understanding of the Word of God. From this we learn that knowing and believing God's Word is totally essential for our victorious living today. We must know it completely and totally (Ephesians 4:12; 2 Timothy 3:16-17). Also, we must believe it, especially the part about God's holiness and hatred of sin. Mistaking patience and grace for approval of sin is very wrong. God will judge sin. Sin does bring death. Satan is a liar and deceiver (John 8:44). Unless a thought lines up with God's Word it is wrong.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Sin, and demonizing, all start in the mind, in our thoughts. Actions result from mental choices we make. The majority of demonizing consists of demons putting thoughts into a person's mind or snatching thoughts out of a person's mind. While they don't have access to our minds and thoughts to the same extent that God does, the Bible makes it clear that there is some access. Jesus said this in the Parable of the Sower and the Seed: "Satan comes and takes away the word that was sown." (Mark 4:15). David's thought to take a census was demonic (I Chronicles 21:1ff; II Samuel 24:1ff). So was Ananias & Sapphira's greed (Acts 5:3) and Saul's jealousy/anger (I Samuel 16:14-23). That's why, when talking about spiritual warfare, Paul says we are to "bring every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ." (2 Corinthians 10:4-5). Not only can Satan's forces put wrong thoughts into our minds, they can snatch right thoughts out of our minds (Mark 4:15) so that we forget them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Eve was deceived by Satan because she acted according to her feelings and emotions, putting them over the truth of what God had clearly said (Titus 2:13-15; 2 Corinthians 11:3). Feelings and emotions are fine, important and necessary. They are icing on the cake of life, adding color and enjoyment, and indeed God created them for this purpose, but He didn't create them to be the **source** of our decision-making. Our feelings should depend on our rational thought. When our feelings get ahead of it or away from it then trouble comes. You know in your mind that you are an OK person, yet fear you will be a failure and rejected. When feelings aren't founded on truth they go wrong. The truth is that you are who you are because God created you that way (Psalm 139), but your emotions reject that truth and try to do the 'thinking' themselves. We must let our mind explain reality to our emotions. When we place feelings over fact, we are wrong.

LESSON FOR TODAY: How can God's people, who have His truth in the Bible, be so deceived by Satan and his demons? Do you remember the children's story about the emperor's new clothes? Some thieves convinced him they were making fine garments which only the enlightened could see so he pretended to see them. Everyone else did also. Then in a parade, a little boy spoke the truth and everyone realized they had been believing a lie and deceiving themselves. Satan deceives us into believing a lie. But how can we be deceived if we know the truth? We always have a free will choice and are never forced to believe a lie.

1. We can be demonized. Like a drunk is influenced by alcohol, so can we be influenced by demons. For more details about, this see under JESUS' FIRST DELIVERANCE (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37).
2. We can prefer to be deceived because we don't want to face the truth or don't like the truth, so we convince ourselves that a lie is true. We start to really believe it because we want to.
3. We let ourselves be controlled by our emotions instead of our mind. When we let our feelings explain reality (for example, reacting out of fear), we replace the truth with deception.

4. Our mind can be deceived, too, when we use it as the final determining factor and think absolute truth comes from within us. Without the anchor of God's Word to form our mind and correct our errors we can truly believe something based on the facts as we interpret them. But we may not be interpreting them correctly. Only God has all the facts and perfect insight, seeing the future as clearly as the past, so when we reject His truth we are open to any kind of deception.

5. Satan and demons try to get us to believe their deceptions. Of course they don't 'sell' their product as a black lie, but make it look as appealing and good as possible. We sometimes fall for the bait because the black appeals to us. They show the immediate benefits, not long term consequences of the sin.

6. Even aside from the enemy, our own natural tendency is to sin (this is called our "sin nature"). Because of this we prefer sin, for since the fall, we humans are often more interested in what is easiest and most enjoyable, instead of what is best in the long run. Our 'flesh' desires instant gratification and we can 'want' something so much that we leave all reason and balance behind.

Sin entered with Adam and Eve and therefore spiritual warfare entered the human arena. God was quick to assure us who the ultimate winner would be. While the ultimate Victor is clearly known, the battle that started in Eden continues even though today.

3. THE BATTLE BEGINS (Genesis 3:8-15)

With the arrival of sin came the start of spiritual warfare. "I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers" (Genesis 3:15a) God told Satan. The battle had begun.

God also foretold that there would ultimately be victory over Satan by Jesus: "He will crush your head and you will strike His heel" (Genesis 3:15b). The battle will continue throughout time. There will be an ongoing conflict between God with His angels and Satan with his demons. Mankind will be caught in the middle of this conflict. Satan will have limited victory ("strike His heel" – a painful but not fatal wound on the cross) but ultimately be defeated ("He will crush your head" – a decisive overthrow of Satan and his kingdom – Luke 10:18; Romans 16:20; Revelation 20:2, 10) by the descendant of the woman – Jesus Christ. In Romans 16:20 the same term, "crush" is used showing the same event is being referred to.

The "seed of the woman" (Genesis 3:15) is, of course, the Messiah (Hebrews 2:14; Romans 16:20). Jesus would come through a woman, not a man and woman, and the virgin birth fulfills that part of the prophecy (Luke 126-38; Galatians 4:4; Revelation 12:1-6, 13-17).

LESSON FOR TODAY: *This battle that has started will continue between God's kingdom and Satan's kingdom until the Messiah crushes Satan's work at His Second Coming. Remember that when you follow God you will be in a battle against Satan and his forces. He never promised life will be easy, but that He will be with us (John 17:15-19). Do not be surprised when conflicts come, for they will. Our Christian world view teaches us that we will always be in this battle, for Satan and demons will battle God and His kingdom until the end. Satan cannot attack God directly so he attacks His children instead. God allows it because He honors our free will to choose if we serve Him or Satan. He also allows it to give us an opportunity to grow spiritually and to show His power and provision to us by our faithful trust and continued obedience.*

C. ADAM TO ABRAHAM

Once begun, the battle continued through Adam's lifetime and through each of his descendants. It sometimes seemed to change as strategy and focus of the enemy shifted, but the battle was always on in one form or another.

1. CAIN & ABEL (Genesis 4:1-8)

Soon after leaving Eden the warfare which had been foretold between God and Satan (Genesis 3:15) broke into an all-out conflict. The seed of the ultimately victorious Messiah was prophesied to come through the human family, so Satan tried to do everything possible to stop that line from continuing. Satan used invisible supernatural personalities (demons) as well as human agents to accomplish his mission. Most of the time his demons motivated and directed the actions of the humans they influence. This is the case with Cain who was incited by Satan to kill his brother Abel (Genesis 4:1-8).

This action is the first sin mentioned in the battle since the fall in Eden. The word for 'sin' (Genesis 4:7) is revealing. "Sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you but you must master it" God said to Cain (Genesis 3:7). Sin is personified as a wild beast, perhaps a serpent as in Eden, who is waiting to spring upon Cain. The Hebrew word for sin used here is closely connected to a word used for "demon" ('rabisum,' an Akkadian word). In Mesopotamian beliefs the 'rabisum' (demon) lurked at the entrance of a building, either to do good and protect the person or to do harm and threaten them. Whatever it was that led to Cain's sin, we know Satan was involved for I John 3:12 says Cain "belonged to the evil one." We don't know if Cain was demonized (or Satanized) before or after the murder of Abel, but we know he was deeply involved in this event. (For more details about the definition of 'demonized' see under JESUS' FIRST DELIVERANCE Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37.)

LESSON FOR TODAY: Outwardly both Cain and Abel were the same in that they brought offerings to God. But in their hearts they were very different. Abel did what he did out of love for God, Cain out of duty. The battle must be won or lost in our mind first of all. Before the murder God warned Cain clearly that sin was trying to slip into his life and destroy him (Genesis 4:6-7) but he did not heed the warning. "Sin is crouching at your door, it desires to have you, but you must master it" (Genesis 4:7). Sin is pictured as a demon hiding, ever alert, looking for a way to attack and defeat us. We, like Cain, have a free will choice to make if we will follow or not. Think of the demon(s) assigned to bring you down as hiding and watching you, looking for any opportunity to defeat you. Where have their attacks against you been most successful? What can you do to have victory over them?

2. TIME OF NOAH (Genesis 6:1-8)

After Abel died Satan's plan was thwarted by the birth of Seth. But the conflict continued. By the time of Noah, seventeen hundred years later, we see the battle between God and Satan has not only continued but greatly expanded. It appears that human females ("daughters of men") were mating with demons ("sons of God") (Genesis 6:1-8). Admittedly this is a difficult passage with various interpretations, but no matter what the exact identities of these 'sons' and 'daughters' are, the end result was something so awful that God decided to destroy all mankind because of it.

Many have speculated that demons were mating with human females and a hybrid race was being formed. We can't be sure of this, but it certainly is a possible interpretation of Genesis 6:1-8. Whatever it was, it does seem certain that what happened between these groups was of a sexual nature and was something clearly forbidden. Today there are some demons who specialize in attacking a person, male or female, in sexual ways. Sometimes they are referred to as incubi (those acting like men sexually) or succubae (those acting like women sexually). All demons, like angels, are males, but seem to be able to manifest as male or female at times. They try to sexually stimulate a human being in order to control and torment the person. There have been many accounts of this throughout history.

What happened in Noah's day created a race who are called 'Nephilim' (Genesis 6:4). This word means 'fallen' in the plural form and perhaps refers to some kind of unusual people, perhaps larger than human beings. We know that after the flood, giants (also called 'Nephilim') were born but these were 100% human beings who were physically larger than others (Numbers 13:31-33; Goliath, etc.).

We can't know for sure what happened, but clearly there is a major battle going on here. It is multidimensional, waged by the flesh (sin nature - Genesis 6:5) and Satan/demons (Genesis 6:1-2). This is perhaps the most demonized generation ever and won't be equalled or surpassed until the Tribulation. Only Noah and his wife followed God, and raised their sons to do the same. Thus everyone but Noah and his family were destroyed. Clearly God judges sin, Satan and evil. That will be clearly seen the next time this type of demonic activity is manifested on earth, during the Tribulation.

LESSON FOR TODAY: In our world where sexuality and sexual sin seems to be rampant, remember unbiblical sex is a tool of Satan to defeat and destroy us. God created sex to be a beautiful picture of our oneness with God (Ephesians 5:23), so Satan attacks it to dishonor that picture and defeat us. The power of sex is strong, and unleashed in an ungodly way as it is today brings defeat to many of God's people. God's strict limits on sex are not to restrict our pleasure but to protect and ensure it. Sexual temptation can be very enticing, but remember it is an attack of the enemy to capture and enslave a person in bondage. Many of God's soldiers have been taken out of the battle by defeat in sexual sin, so be very careful!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Demons who have sex with human beings, both male and female, are unfortunately quite common even today. Those who take on the male sex role are called 'incubi' and those who take on the female sex role are called 'succubai'. There have been accounts of this throughout history, and anyone who deals in spiritual warfare today will surely run into it. If you, or someone you are ministering to (male or female), tells you they are being sexually attacked in their bed at night, or at other times, make sure you believe them! It does happen.

LESSON FOR TODAY: There is no such thing as 'casual' sex. Any time there is sexual involvement demons who have access to one person can claim access to the other (1 Corinthians 6:16)

LESSON FOR TODAY: By the time of Noah mankind was fully involved in a mutidimensional sin war. People battled the world, flesh and pride and also the forces of evil (1 John 2:16). "The Lord saw how great man's wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time" (Genesis 6:5). Humanity is capable of any kind of sin. Nothing seems too evil for him to pursue. The battle with sin had reached its optimal potential, and continues that way today.

3. NIMROD & BABEL (Genesis 11:1-9)

After the flood Noah and his family were told to repopulate the earth. They were to move to various geographical areas and reproduce until the earth was once again fully inhabited. But they didn't spread out geographically. Instead they stayed together so that they could depend on each other and wouldn't need God. The battle between serving God's Kingdom or Satan's kingdom continued. So 400 years after the flood God again has to bring judgment on sinful, disobedient mankind (Genesis 11:1-9).

Nimrod (Genesis 10:8-9) appeared to be the instigating force behind the tower that was built. He is a picture of the Antichrist used by Satan to oppose God. Like the Antichrist, he may even have been indwelt by Satan for he was a murderous, evil person who elevated himself as god-man and was worshipped as such (Genesis 10:8-9). Statues have been found showing him being worshipped as a baby in his mother's arms, then later being killed and coming back to life (for more information see "The Two Babylons" by Hyslop). This was the foundation for the mystery religions which spread to Europe and continue today in various forms. Nimrod was a counterfeit of Jesus, someone used by Satan to take glory and attention from God the son.

The tower he built was probably like one of the many ziggurats discovered in the area of ancient Babylon. It was a symbol of religious humanism, idolatry, polythiesm and defiance of God. It was build with its top "until the heavens" (literal transliteration). They weren't trying to physically build a structure so high it would touch heaven, but rather to connect with the heavens through the religion that centered around the tower. Some scholars feel the temple on top contained a perverted chart of the stars, the beginning of astrology, and was used as an early means of predicting the future. While many details are unclear, we do know this was definitely part of Satan building his world empire in opposition to God. It was a continuing of the battle against God and His kingdom. Man, in his pride and self-centeredness, used his free will to follow Nimrod and oppose God. The same will happen in the Tribulation when the Antichrist (pictured by Nimrod) leads 'Babylon' (Revelation 17 and 18) against God's Kingdom. Ultimately that kingdom, too, will be destroyed and God's kingdom victorious, but not until much warfare takes place.

LESSON FOR TODAY: There are many today who proclaim the same message as Nimrod and the Antichrist: "Life without God is better. We don't need Him. Christianity just holds us back from total fulfillment." Humanism, New Age thought, 'tolerance' and "openmindedness" to any and all belief systems can seem appealing. Many rally around them. But they are all lies of the enemy (John 8:44) and we must be very careful to not get swayed into believing them. These can be very dangerous for they are subtle, camouflaged in seemingly good terms. These hidden attacks by the enemy can be more hazardous than some of the direct frontal attacks we face for we often don't recognize them for what they are - works of the enemy. Be alert!

4. JOB (Job 1:6-12; 2:1-7)

Satan not only attacked God's kingdom on a world-wide scale, but he opposed individuals who were part of that kingdom as well. Job is a prime example of this. He lived around the same time as Abraham, but not much is know about where he fits in historically or geographically. He is a picture of a righteous man, following God, facing his own warfare because he is faithful to God (Job 1:6-12; 2:1-7).

One of the ways Satan attacks God's kingdom and people is by bringing accusations of sin against believers (Zechariah 3:1-4; Revelation 12:10). Because God is holy and must judge sin, Satan tries to point out the sins of believers in order to bring God's wrath upon them. However we are safe from condemnation because Jesus paid the price for our sins on the cross (Romans 8:1). Still, Satan is forever tattling on us to God.

We don't know how Satan is allowed in God's presence, but in some way or form this must happen for he accuses Job to God (Job 1:1-6; 2:1-7). God allows Satan to attack Job, but with certain limits which God imposes (Job 1:12; 2:6).

LESSON FOR TODAY: All Satan's attacks against us are 'Father filtered,' allowed by God for His glory and our good (Romans 8:28). This painful suffering of Job's served as an example of faithfulness to all heavenly beings, and to the millions who have read of Job in the Bible.

One other item of interest in this account is the way Satan was able to attack Job and his family. He used evil men (Job 1:13-15), nature (lightning, Job 1:16), hostile men (take animals, kill servants, Job 1:17), natural disaster (wind to destroy a house and kill Job's children, Job 1:18-19), and sickness and pain against Job himself (Job 2:6). While we aren't to fear Satan or give him credit for more power than he has, still he clearly has more ability to use nature, people and sickness than we often recognize. He has many weapons in his warfare against us.

LESSON FOR TODAY: While not every natural disaster, attack by evil people or physical sickness is from Satan, this probably does happen more often than we imagine. We aren't to fear him for God is greater (1 John 4:4), but we are to recognize the attacks of our enemy so we can properly fight against them (2 Corinthians 2:5-11). If you are facing some of these right now, follow Job's example of not sinning by accusing God of wrongdoing (Job 1:22; 2:9-10). Stay faithful to God and keep your trust in Him no matter what (Job 1:21). See it as part of your warfare and don't let Satan defeat you through it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Why does God allow people to suffer and struggle? How can a God of love allow so much evil to continue? God doesn't defend Himself or explain what He allows. He gives us a free will choice as to whose kingdom we will pursue. Sin and the resulting evil are the natural consequences of turning from Him.

The fact of pain in the world is not a reason to see God as less than loving. Still, innocent people suffer. We can't try to evaluate God's person and character by these things for He has proven His character and love by leaving heaven, becoming a man, living on earth, then going to the cross to take on the punishment for every sin we would ever commit. That proves His love for us beyond a shadow of a doubt. If it weren't for that we would all spend eternity in hell. So anything less than hell from now on is because of His grace and mercy. Why He seems to show more love and mercy to some than others is not up to us to judge. God isn't accountable to us. We cannot stand in judgment of Him until we know all the facts as He knows them and see everything as He sees it. Many things seem unfair to little children but they must trust their parents. Getting an injection from a doctor, having a pretty shiny knife taken away, things like these seem to a child that a parent doesn't love them. But a child doesn't have the perspective to truly understand all that is involved and we don't either. We do know that facing things we don't understand gives us an opportunity to trust. Our faith is stretched and we grow. God is glorified as we see Him deliver and as others watch us continually trust Him no matter what happens. Spiritual warfare itself is often very painful. It is just one of many forms of suffering God uses for our good and for His glory. Often deliverance isn't a sudden, complete act. God allows the struggle to go on for it teaches us to fight and to trust Him.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Another important lesson from this passage is that Satan can only do what God allows. Satan had to have permission to attack Job, and even then God limited what he could do (Job 1-2; 1 Kings 22:19-23). God actually used his evil plan for good (Romans 8:28; Genesis 50:20). He used the lies the demons gave the false prophets to bring about the destruction God wanted (1 Kings 22:19-23). He used Satan's afflictions on Job to be a faithful witness and example to Satan and his forces then, and to untold millions of believers since. He used all that Joseph went through to save the nation of Israel (Genesis 50:20). He uses what you and I go through for our growth and for His glory as well. When you look at nature you see God is a God who never wastes anything, but makes multiple good uses of everything. He does the same with our pain and suffering as well. Not one tear, not the slightest struggle is wasted but is used for His plan in our lives (Romans 8:28).

LESSON FOR TODAY: A related question is why God would allow Satan to attack us at all when He could prevent it. If He is a God of love why not deny Satan and demons any opportunity to attack? Then we wouldn't have to resist or learn to fight? Life would be much simpler and easier. But that isn't God's purpose, nor is it how He works. Why didn't God just kill all the Canaanites and not have the Jews have to go through warfare against them? The Jews had a free will to follow God or not, and if they followed they needed to learn to obey and to fight as God would have them. Perseverance, faith, teamwork, patience, obedience and many lessons were tied up in this. God used it to stretch their faith, to give them opportunities to grow and see Him work through them and to show others His glory by what He could do through His people. The same is true of us today.

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING. At the end of each major section in this paper you will find questions to help you remember and apply what you have learned. You can look back through what you have read for the answers if need be. You need a Bible, a notebook and a pen to do these questions.

If you want to send me your answers I would be glad to read them and offer comments or suggestions that might help you. You can write me at jerry@schmoyer.net. If you have any questions or prayer requests please feel free to write to me.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION: Answer the following questions.

1. Explain in your own words why God allowed man to have a free will.
2. What difference has it made in the world today that man has a free will?
3. What difference has it made in your life that you have a free will? Are you glad you have a free will? Why or why not?
4. Why does God allow Satan and demons to attack His people? Why doesn't He just stop them?
5. What lessons can you learn from Job about how and why Satan attacks us today?
6. What lessons can you learn from Job about having victory over Satan's attacks?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

D. FORMATION OF ISRAEL

From the dispersal of man at Babel through the period of the Judges, warfare continued. These approximately 600 years show a change from Satan and his demons attacking mankind to a more direct attack on Israel, God's people. With the rest of mankind firmly under his control, Satan attacks God's kingdom by attacking His chosen people.

1. ABRAHAM (Genesis 11 – 24)

Because man had continually disobeyed God and did not respond to Him in faith and obedience, God's plan was to establish one nation as His chosen people. Through them the world would learn about God, receive His written Word and give the world the much needed Savior. If all mankind would not follow God, one people group could be His representatives and lead the way. God chose Abraham to be the first in that line of people, now called the Jews.

About two thousand years after Adam and Eve sinned God called Abraham to leave Ur, a thriving civilization where the moon was worshipped, and go to a new land where God would bless him and start a new nation through his descendants (Genesis 11:27 – 12:5). This brought attack after attack on Abraham, for Satan knew if he could destroy this nation there would be no written Word and no Savior. Stopping these new people before they could get established was important to ultimate victory for Satan. So he attacked Abraham in many different ways.

That is why when we look at Abraham's life we see a series of tests. Satan used them to try to defeat and destroy Abraham but God allowed them as opportunities for Abraham's faith to grow and his obedience to be shown (James 1:13-15). God used these tests to teach Abraham to remain faithful despite his fear, attacks by others, unfavorable circumstances and physical difficulties. Some were through nature, others by enemies and some even from those closest to him, like Sarah his wife. Most of the tests he passed, but several he failed by not trusting in God and obeying Him no matter what. He was retested in some of these, but wasn't always successful the second time, either. (Satan tried to defeat or discredit Abraham, to dilute the line of the seed by trying to have Sarah have a baby by Pharaoh instead of by Abraham as God has said and by trying to delay or destroy the next inline, Isaac.) But God was faithful even when Abraham was not and His plan prevailed and His kingdom continued.

LESSON FOR TODAY: If we learn to view the events in our lives as tests, opportunities to trust God, we will have a more Biblical view of what is happening and why it is happening. When we blame God, feel sorry for ourselves, try to solve them with our own limited resources, or get discouraged and want to quit, we are losing the battle. We must learn to view every obstacle in life, from the least to the greatest, as an attack against our faith and therefore an opportunity to grow stronger as we stay faithful no matter what. What is testing your faith at this time in life? What is Satan trying to accomplish through this? What do you need to do starting now to pass this faith test?

2. ISAAC, JACOB, JOSEPH (Genesis 25 - 50)

After Abraham's time Satan's attacks continued against his descendants, Isaac and Jacob. They didn't do very well in their tests of faithfulness and drifted from God's perfect plan for them. Sin, disobedience and eventually intermarriage among the grandchildren of Jacob

caused God to take a hard but necessary step to assure the racial purity of the Jewish race so the Messiah could one day come and defeat Satan and His kingdom. God used Satan's attacks for His good. Satan attacked Joseph for his faithfulness. But God used a famine to move the small Jewish nation into Egypt where they would not be able to intermarry because the Egyptians looked down on them and rejected intermarriage with them. For the next 400 years God used Egypt to grow them into a larger, more faithful nation. Outwardly it was their sin and disobedience that brought this about, but God used even that for their own good and His ultimate purpose (Romans 8:28)

3. MOSES (Exodus - Deuteronomy)

Deliverance from Egypt

During the time of Moses we see the greatest series of power encounters between God and Satan recorded in the Old Testament. It is a time of miracles (burning bush, 10 plagues, Red Sea opening) and direct conflict with the forces of darkness in the form of Jannes and Jambrees (2 Timothy 3:8; Exodus 7 & 8). These demonized magicians were able to perform counterfeit miracles in order to blind Pharaoh to God's superior power. God put a limit on their ability to counter His works (Exodus 8:18), but it was enough for Pharaoh to allow himself to be blinded to the truth (Exodus 8:19).

God used a series of 10 plagues to battle the gods of Egypt and defeat each of them in their areas of strength (Exodus 7 through 11). The idols the Egyptians served were powerless to protect themselves or the people who worshipped them. It was a time of great spiritual warfare. Not only were the plagues physically painful, but God allowed Satan's demons to attack those who weren't following Him. He used these demons to inflict fear, pain and destruction (Psalm 78:49). This is one of many examples in the Bible where God uses the destruction caused by Satan and demons for His ultimate plan and purpose.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God does not prevent the battles we have with Satan, but He does give us victory through them. God protected and provided, but the Jews had to learn to fight their battles in His strength. God delivered them, but after deliverance (salvation) they had to learn to fight, as must we. We are not exempt from warfare and never will be, but we have His promises of ultimate victory when we trust Him and follow Him. Don't waste energy and prayer time asking for the battle to be milder so you can manage, instead ask for greater strength so you can fight and win. Don't try avoiding the battle, face it right on. And most of all, don't compromise or give in. Being taken captive by your enemies will NOT make your life any easier!

While these battles seemed to be between Pharaoh and Moses, the Egyptians and the Jews, what was happening on earth was really just a reflection of the battle going on in the heavenlies between God and Satan, angels and demons. Pharaoh is a picture of Satan who holds God's people in bondage and tries to destroy them. This began when he tried to destroy the male babies, thus hoping to end the line of the Messiah who would one day crush his head. It continued through slavery and culminated with his army attacking the unarmed Jews at the Red Sea. Each time God victoriously protected His people and the line of the Messiah. Egypt is a picture of the world and of Satan's power while the Jews are a picture God's people in bondage.

Deliverance came through innocent blood being shed to cover the sins of the guilty. Passover was, and still is, a picture of salvation in Jesus. The Red Sea deliverance was God's victory over Satan and the world in freeing His people from bondage. God delivers by blood

(Passover lamb, Jesus the Lamb of God on the cross) and power (opening Red Sea showing His power over all, opening the grave Jesus was in showing He was alive). Deliverance is available for God's people, but death and judgment for those who use their free will to turn from Him (Exodus 12:12).

LESSON FOR TODAY: What we face in this life is a reflection, a reverberation of the battle going on in the heavenlies between God's forces and Satan's forces. It is often acted out on earth. By our faithfulness and perseverance we are showing the enemy that God is greater than these attacks and ultimately will bring Him glory through it.

Traveling to Mount Sinai

God's miraculous provision did not end when the Jews left Egypt. He provided manna, kept them from getting sick, prevented clothing and shoes from wearing out and provided water when needed (Exodus 15-17). He led them by the cloud of fire, by His very Shekinah Presence. God protected and provided, but the Jews had to learn to fight their battles in His strength.

In their travel from Egypt to Mount Sinai the Jews had to travel near the land of the Amalekites. The Amalekites followed them, picking off the weak and sickly who weren't part of the main body of Israel (Deuteronomy 25:17-18).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan as a roaring lion looks for weak and sick sheep, those who aren't with the main body, and easily picks them off (1 Peter 5:8). We can't fight alone; we must be close to the main army. Be part of a sound Bible-believing church. Be involved in its ministry. Surround yourself with good Christian friends. When you notice one of them drifting do all you can to bring them back to the fellowship. When you are being attacked let others know what they can do to help you. Stragglers and the weak are easy targets for the enemy.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Amalek is a picture of the flesh. The flesh is always here to battle us. Demons don't always attack directly, they use our flesh (sin nature, natural tendency of self-centeredness and sin) as well. In fact, many times they don't have to do anything, they just let our sin nature defeat us. We, like the Jews, must learn to have victory over the flesh by prayer and fighting. Sins of the flesh include such things as lust, greed, laziness, self-indulgence, etc. – anything outside of God's will for us to be more like Jesus.

God allowed Amalek to continually attack so the Jews would stop and fight. They had to learn to fight. They were armed by God after the Egyptian army drowned (Exodus 14:30) but had to learn to use their weapons.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God provides armor for us (Ephesians 6:10-20) but we must learn to use it as well. (See Ephesians 6 about the Armor of God for much more information about the weapons and equipment God provides for us.)

The Jews experienced victory when Moses prayed and the army fought behind Joshua (Exodus 17:8-15). Both were necessary for victory. Victory over Amalek was only temporary, for there were many future encounters to come.

LESSON FOR TODAY: For us to have victory means we must pray without ceasing (1 Thessalonians 5:17) for it is part of the weaponry God gives us (Ephesians 6:18). We must also fight using the armor He has provided (Ephesians 6:10-17). Prayer without doing our best in life's battles isn't enough; neither is doing our best but neglecting to pray. It takes both faith and works for victory. Our warfare with the flesh will never end. Like the Jews with the Amalekites, battles will continue as long as we are on this earth.

At Mount Sinai

God's people needed God's truth to live and serve Him. God revealed His law to them, along with directions for the tabernacle and priesthood. Knowledge of and obedience to God's revealed truth is the key to victory (Psalm 119:9-11).

LESSON FOR TODAY: We cannot have victory in our own lives, nor can we properly minister to those who are struggling, if there is sin in our lives and we aren't living in obedience to God's commands (2 Timothy 2:5; Exodus 23:21; Deuteronomy 27:10; 30:20; Exodus 24:7; Jeremiah 7:23; 1 Samuel 15:22; Hebrews 11:8; Joshua 24:24; John 14:15). Sin grieves (Ephesians 4:30) and quenches (1 Thessalonians 5:19) the Holy Spirit. God stands ready to help us and give us victory, but we cannot allow any sin in our lives. We must confess it (1 John 1:7-10) and live in total obedience in order to have victory.

A part of the law God gave them directly forbid any involvement with anything occult, anything demonic. "When you enter the land the Lord your God is giving you, do not learn to imitate the detestable ways of the nations there. 10 Let no one be found among you who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft, 11 or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead. 12 Anyone who does these things is detestable to the Lord, and because of these detestable practices the Lord your God will drive out those nations before you. 13 You must be blameless before the Lord your God." (Deuteronomy 18:9-13)

The death penalty was the consequence of being involved in any of these activities (Leviticus 20:2; Deuteronomy 13:10). *Child sacrifice* to the demon gods heads the list (Deuteronomy 18:10; 2 Kings 2:1-17). Worship of the stars, sorcery and divination were part of the worship of Molech. *Divination* was foretelling the future by hidden knowledge through supernatural powers (Ezekiel 21:21). *Sorcery* was used to predict the future based on the movement of the planets (Acts 8:9-24). Use of hallucinogenic drugs accompanied this (Galatians 5:20 'pharmakeia'). *Omens* were supposedly discovered by inspecting the entrails of animals, following the flights of birds or the motions of snakes. *Witchcraft* was a means of calling on demons for information, often through use of drugs or perfumes. It is strongly forbidden (2 Kings 9:22; 2 Chronicles 33:6; Micah 5:12; Nahum 3:4) and any who were involved in this were put to death (Exodus 22:18; Leviticus 20:27).

The list of forbidden occult practices continues with *casting spells*, something done by charms, spells or curses (Acts 16:16-18). A *medium* is someone through whom a demon speaks (Isaiah 8:19; Leviticus 19:31; 20:27). A *spiritist* is similar. The term usually referred to a male witch who would contact demons to try to get information from them. Necromancy, *consulting the dead*, was also done by contact with demons who impersonated the person who had died. This is strongly forbidden by God (Leviticus 19:31; 20:6, 27; 2 Kings 23:24; 1 Chronicles 10:13-14) and is what Saul did at the end of his life (1 Samuel 28:7-25).

LESSON FOR TODAY: There are many similar ways of contacting demons today as well, but every way of contacting demons is strictly forbidden. Usually they camouflage who they are so as to make the practice more acceptable. Contact with any power other than God is strictly forbidden. Even if the person isn't aware it is a demon, when they open themselves up to a power that is not God then the demon(s) can and will use that to claim control over them. These include consulting a spiritist, using a Ouija board, participating in occult or Satanic worship, taking part in a séance or any number of forbidden practices. If someone has been involved in these things their power can be broken by confession and putting the sin under the blood of Jesus (1 John 1:9). Also pray to take back any access the sin had given to demons.

The Ten Commandments

Another significant passage about our warfare with demons is in the Ten Commandments, Exodus 20:4-5. After the commandment to not make any idols God gives the reason: He is a jealous God “punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate Me” (Exodus 20:4-5). God does not hold us accountable for the sins of our ancestors (Deuteronomy 24:16) but the consequences of their sins does pass on from generation to generation (Ezekiel 18:2). There is a big difference between ‘sins’ (individual acts of sin) and ‘sin’ (general term for the culmination of all sin together).

One of the main ways sin passes from generation to generation is through demonic control. When a person opens themselves to demonizing, that demon claims them and all they have. When they have children the demon then claims the child as well (Exodus 34:6-7; Deuteronomy 5:8-9). There are many examples of this in Scripture (Nehemiah 1:4-9; Jeremiah 14:20; Daniel 1:1-19). This goes on from generation to generation until broken by prayer in Jesus’ name. As believers we have authority to break this in Jesus’ name (1 Corinthians 7:14).

LESSON FOR TODAY: When one person opens themselves up to demonic influence, that person’s descendants are also at risk of demonizing. When a demon has access to a person, he also claims right to all that person has, including their children. The Bible says these sins pass on down to the third or fourth generation (Exodus 20:4-5; Deuteronomy 5:8-9; Exodus 34:6-7). Ancestral, or generational access is one of the most common openings for demonized.

This is especially true of first born males, but certainly not limited to them. Satan seeks to claim them because God says they belong to Him (Exodus 34:20). This is by no means limited to firstborn males, or even to males. Any child is open to this. If you notice some of the same problems in your life as in your siblings, parents, aunts, uncles, or grandparents it could very well be ancestral demonizing. The same demons have access to those in the family and do the same work in various members (not all members, that would be too obvious). They claim the blood line or family name and use that as access. If you see some patterns in the symptoms or characteristics of demonizing that were covered previously in others in your family that could show ancestral access. That is why so often a boy who hates his father for beating his mother grows up to beat his own wife, or a child of an alcoholic becomes an alcoholic himself. It is not uncommon to observe generations of abuse, addiction, hatred, superstition and fear, pride, control and manipulation, rejection, sexual sins and perversions, aberrant religious beliefs, witchcraft, and rebellion etc.

Generational bondage can be broken by personally repenting of and confessing the sins of past generations. Claim the blood of Christ as stronger than your blood line and put that access under the blood of Jesus (Romans 5:15). Claim that you are a "new creation, old things have passed away, all things have become new" (II Corinthians 5:17). State that you are "born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God" (John 1:13). Then ask God to turn that curse into a blessing (Deuteronomy 23:5).

LESSON FOR TODAY: When counseling someone who you feel may be demonized be sure to start by asking questions about similar sins and problems in other members of the family. This is especially true if the person struggled with the issue since they were quite young. Generational bondage can be broken by putting the sins of past generations under the blood of Jesus and forbid any of Satan’s forces to make any claim against you through them. Claim the blood of Christ as stronger than your blood line and put any demonic access under the blood of Jesus (Romans 5:15). Claim that you are a "new creation, old things have passed away, all things have become new" (II Corinthians 5:17). The person must not allow himself to participate in that sin any more or the access will again be open. "Go and sin no more" (John 8:11).

Failure to enter the land

Despite all God's show of power and clear provision, the Jews failed to enter the land because of their fear of the giants who were already living there. Quite naturally, they had chosen the best land for themselves. But God promised this to His people. Instead of trusting Him they let their fear control them. Therefore God set the generation who left Egypt aside, causing them to wander for 40 years until all those over 20 had died.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The Jews in Moses' day never went into the land God had promised them. They never attained spiritual victory or maturity because their fear and lack of faith defeated them. Today fear is still one of Satan's greatest weapons, something that keeps many believers from growing to maturity and attaining spiritual victory. If you struggle with fear this is where your battle must be won. Maybe you don't call it 'fear' but rather refer to it as worry, concern, anxiety, nervousness, fretfulness, apprehension or some similar term. Believe God's promises and move forward in faith, not fear (Proverbs 3:25; Isaiah 14:3; Psalm 34:4; Joshua 1:9; 10:8; 23:9-11; Leviticus 26:8; Exodus 14:13; I Samuel 17:45-47; II Samuel 22:33-35, 40-41; Philippians 4:6-7; 4:13; 2 Timothy 1:7 Exodus 14:13). Write some of these down, memorize them, and quote them whenever your faith struggles.

Possessing our inheritance

While the generation of Jews who left Egypt did not enter the land, the next generation did. Numbers 32:18-22 describes their key to victory. "We will not return to our homes until every Israelite has received his inheritance. 19 We will not receive any inheritance with them on the other side of the Jordan, because our inheritance has come to us on the east side of the Jordan." 20 Then Moses said to them, "If you will do this — if you will arm yourselves before the Lord for battle, 21 and if all of you will go armed over the Jordan before the Lord until he has driven his enemies out before him — 22 then when the land is subdued before the Lord, you may return and be free from your obligation to the Lord and to Israel. And this land will be your possession before the Lord." (Numbers 32:18-22) They determined to possess it (Numbers 32:18) and armed themselves for battle (Numbers 32:20). They then moved ahead in faith in God, trusting and following Him (Numbers 32:21) and God gave them victory (Numbers 32:22).

LESSON FOR US: The physical warfare of the Jews over their enemies in the Old Testament pictures our spiritual warfare against our enemies (the flesh and Satan) in the New Testament. We can learn many spiritual lessons from their physical battles. Numbers 32:18-22 gives the key for our victory in spiritual warfare. First of all, we must be totally committed to having victory (Numbers 32:18) and willing to pay whatever price is necessary (Matthew 16:24; Mark 8:34; Luke 9:23). How badly do you want to experience all God has for you? How willing are you to fight for it no matter the cost?

LESSON FOR US: Arm yourself. Make sure you understand and use the armor that is ours (Ephesians 6:10-20). Put on your armor daily and keep it on (see Ephesians 6 for more information). Then move out in faith. Attack the enemy, whatever is challenging you (Numbers 32:21), but do it in God's power (Luke 10:17-20). Don't sit back, don't avoid confrontation, seek out your weaknesses and areas of temptation and defeat them. Then God promises ultimate victory (Numbers 32:22). The Jews challenge was to conquer the Promised Land. "Self" is our land to be subdued, to be tamed and brought under control. It is ours for the taking, although it requires lifelong warfare to gain and keep victory.

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. Abraham's life was a series of tests, opportunities to trust God in faith or to fail to do so. Write a list of some of the main tests you've faced in life and behind each one write if you passed or failed and why.
2. What test(s) are you going through right now? What opportunities is God giving you to trust Him? Are you passing or failing right now?
3. Amalek, the flesh, attacks all of us. Where are you most attacked by your sin nature? What are your weaknesses?
4. What must you do to have victory over these sins of the flesh?
5. Are you aware of any 'generational' sin's that seem to reoccur in your family? Is there anything you struggle with which others in your family also struggle with, especially parents or grandparents? If so, what are these things?
6. If you sense any of these things in your life use the following prayer:

"Gracious Father over all, I acknowledge before you the sins of my parents and ancestors. I know that they have sinned because all men and women are sinners. And so, I openly confess the sins of my parents and ancestors. I am sorry for their sins against you and I ask that you cover their sins with the blood of Jesus and not hold their consequences against me or my descendants. I claim the finished work of Jesus Christ, Who bore all my sin upon Himself. In faith I accept that work on the basis of your holy Word. I reclaim any consent given to Satan's forces by my parents' sin. Dear Jesus, please set me free from all evil influences coming from my parents and ancestors in the name of Jesus. I know I am a new creation in Christ. Old things have gone and all things have become new. I here and now reject and disown all the sins of my ancestors. As one who has been delivered from the power of darkness and translated into the kingdom of God's dear Son, I cancel out all demonic working that has been passed on to me from my ancestors. As one who has been crucified and raised with Christ and who sits with him in heavenly places, I reject any and every way in which Satan may claim ownership of me. I declare myself to be eternally and completely signed over and committed to the Lord Jesus Christ. I now command every familiar spirit and every enemy of the Lord Jesus Christ that is in or around me to flee my presence and never to return. I now ask You, heavenly Father, to fill me with Your Holy Spirit. I submit my body as an instrument of righteousness, a living sacrifice, that I may glorify You in my body. All this I do in the name & authority of the Lord Jesus Christ. Amen."

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

4. JOSHUA (Joshua)

The book of Joshua is one of the most detailed books on spiritual warfare in the Bible. 1 Corinthians 10:1-13 tells us that the things that happened to the Jews who left Egypt and eventually settled the Promised Land happened as examples for us. Physical events in the Old Testament teach spiritual truths in the New Testament. That is true of the book of Joshua.

In Genesis we see the need of salvation – man is sinful. The book starts in Eden in God's presence and ends with the Jews in captivity in Egypt. Exodus brings deliverance by innocent blood being shed (Passover) and by power (Red Sea open, close). Then in Leviticus instruction is given as to how to live for God now that they are delivered. In Numbers they start learning to apply what God has taught them about winning battles they face in life. Deuteronomy reviews lessons from the past about obeying God. God's people must learn from the past so they can move ahead in the future. Then comes Joshua, entering the Promised Land (God's perfect will for them) and conquering through warfare. That's where we are in our Christian life: God has redeemed us and taught us in His Word and from past experiences. Now we pursue His perfect will for our lives but find we must fight to achieve what He has for us.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The same happens today – God freely gives us salvation and has peace, rest and victory available as we live in His perfect will, but there is a battle involved for us to experience and enjoy those blessings. We fight our sinful nature and we fight Satan's demons who try to do all they can to keep us from experiencing all God has for us. It's available, it's ours, but we must battle to reach it. Some Christians believe that if they trust God enough then He will remove all obstacles and bless them with a simple, easy life. Others think that God owes them health, wealth and whatever they want. The truth is that we are in a lifelong battle if we want to remain faithful to God's kingdom. If we give in or compromise, then the battle stops until we start living in faithfulness and obedience again. We are living in enemy-occupied territory seeking to overthrow the prince of this world and release as many of his prisoners as possible. Of course he will oppose all we do!

The generation of Jews who left Egypt died in unbelief, not attaining all the blessings God had for them in this life. They lacked faith and obedience. Their children took over – each generation must pick up where the last generation stopped or failed. They needed faith to face the giants their parents feared. They couldn't do this in their own strength, only in God's.

Crossing the Jordan River

First they would have to cross the Jordan River which was at flood stage (Joshua 3:15). Humanly speaking it was the worst time to try to cross. Human wisdom said to not try, but God chose this time to show His power. God's ways are not our ways (Isaiah 55:8-9). By following God the Jews found there was no opposition because the residents of Canaan were not expecting them to cross at that time. It was also a time when much food was available in the land and the morale of the Canaanites had been undermined by word of God's work through the Jews (Joshua 5:1). God miraculously opened the Jordan, as He had the Red Sea for the previous generation (Exodus 4:3). Only now He expected them to step into the water first (Joshua 3:14-17), not stand on dry ground and watch. As our faith grows God expects more and more of us. So they entered, but it was a commitment for there was no way to return!

The conquest of the land and settling on the ground God gave them required battle after battle. Joshua prepared to enter by meditating on God's Word (Joshua 1:8) and by following Jesus (Joshua 5:13-14). We, too, are to meditate on God's Word (Psalm 1:1-3) and follow Jesus as well (Mark 1:17; 2:14).

The Battle of Jericho

The first battle was at Jericho (Joshua 5:13 – 6:27). It is important to note that no two battles, then or now, are exactly alike. At the Red Sea the Jews were to stand still and see God deliver (Exodus 14:3), but against Amalek the men were to take up weapons and fight (Exodus 17:9). Now at Jericho they were told to march around the walls in faith and God would take care of the walls (Joshua 6:1-3). The Jews followed the Ark of the Covenant which symbolized the seat of God's presence.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Each battle we fight will be different than the battles others fight, and even different than past battles we were involved in. We must follow God's lead each time. There is no one way or 'best' way – be sensitive and follow God. Don't look for a magic formula – obedience to God brings victory, disobedience brings defeat.

Despite victory over great Jericho, the Jews were soundly defeated in their next battle against a small outpost called **Ai** because there was sin in the camp (Joshua 6:18-19; 7:13). Achan tried to keep that which belonged to God. This sin was confessed and removed from the camp, and then there was victory at Ai. We, too, must make sure there is no sin in our lives or we won't have victory but will live in defeat.

LESSON FOR TODAY: An entirely new strategy was used for victory at Ai – an ambush from behind the town. There is no magic formula, no one human leader, and no ritual that guarantees victory. Sensitivity to God's leading and following His Spirit is the only sure way to win. Don't be judging the way God leads others, and don't limit Him in what He wants to do to bring victory in your situation.

After these victories the Jews paused to regroup and refocus. By this time the tribes in the north and south had started unifying to better stand against the Jews.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan's opposition grows stronger in time. The enemy does not give up and surrender. He often gathers more demons and even motivates unbelieving human beings in opposition against God's people. Big victories on our part often bring bigger opposition from Satan and his demons.

Defeating The Southern Tribes

First the Jews faced the southern tribes (Joshua 9:1-2; 10:5). Their biggest danger wasn't their enemy without, but the enemy within – fear. That is one of the demon's best tools to defeat us, but God clearly commands us to have faith, not fear (Joshua 10:8). When the Jews fought as directed by God He brought victory (Joshua 10:11). He even miraculously caused the sun to stand still so there was extended daylight to complete the victory (Joshua 10:12-14).

One of the tribes in the south, the Gibeonites, tried an entirely different but vastly more successful strategy – deception. They sent representatives who pretended to come from far away so as to not seem to be a threat to the Jews, even going so far as to encourage the Jews to make a treaty with them (Joshua 9:3-14).

LESSON FOR TODAY: When the enemy can't win by direct conflict he often resorts to something more subtle and often more effective – deceitfulness. As in Eden, Satan is most dangerous when using deception and lies. We must make sure we know and apply the truth, for while deception brings bondage, truth brings freedom (John 8:32).

Defeating the Northern Tribes

During this time the northern tribes had time to unify and prepare (Joshua 11:1-5). Victory in the north did not come in one quick, short battle as we would often like to see happen, but was a slow and gradual process. The enemy just doesn't quit. Again the greatest problem the Jews faced is fear. The same is true today. God encouraged them in their faith (Joshua 11:6) and brought the victory as they fought (Joshua 11:8). We must fight but it is God who brings victory.

The last great battle to claim and settle the Promised Land, the place of God's blessing, was against the giants (Anakim, Numbers 13:28; Joshua 11:21). It was fear of them that kept the Jews out of the land in Moses' day.

LESSON FOR TODAY: This was a retest. When we are defeated God allows us to face the same enemy time and time again until we learn to have victory. This final series of battles were the hardest, for it was Satan's last great stand and he did all he could to hold on to his territory. Joshua and Caleb were old by this time, but they still battled and God gave victory. As long as we are alive we will face battles, we never grow too old to keep growing and serving.

LESSON FOR TODAY: There are numerous lessons we can learn from Joshua, and an extended personal study of the book will reap rich benefits, so become very familiar with this book. One of the most clear lessons is that fear is a main tool of the enemy and something we need to recognize and defeat by faith (1 John 5:4-5). Also knowing that each battle is different and God has no one way for victory is important. As always, the importance of perseverance is clear throughout. Depend on God alone for victory (Jeremiah 10:23; Proverbs 3:5-6; Romans 8:28).

LESSON FOR TODAY: God equips us with the weapon we will need to win our battles. The sword of the Spirit, the Word of God, is our offensive weapon (Matthew 4:4; Ephesians 6:17). Read, study, memorize and use God's Word. The more proficient you are in God's Word the more powerful you will be in battle.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Another very important lesson to learn about warfare from the book of Joshua is that warfare never ends. God's principle was for the Jews to gradually win over the land, bit by bit (Exodus 22:27-30; Deuteronomy 7:21-22). While the last great battle was with the giants, there were always mop-up operations, pockets of resistance, and rebellion which would break out in various places. Were the Jews to conquer the whole land in Joshua's time they wouldn't have been able to settle and cultivate all of it, so some would return to a wild state. Instead God let them conquer some land and settle, then move ahead to conquer a little more. God's wanted them to conquer and settle the land before moving ahead. We, too, are to learn and grow from each conflict we face. This also was how God taught them to fight: by continual practice. They were to teach their children who would continue the battles, and pass it on to their children.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Fortunately, though, the warfare isn't continual. It comes in cycles. The Jews had times of intense warfare, then times of consolidating and applying their gains. There wasn't constant battle every minute of every day. God interspersed times of rest, times to grow and mature and times to solidify what was won in the previous battle before they had to move ahead again. God does that today as well. We have times of great stretching and challenge, then times of peace and rest during which we gather our strength and apply what we have learned. Then another battle comes. Don't expect the battles to ever end, but don't become discouraged thinking the current battle will last forever. Battles come and go in cycles. We grow spiritually in spurts just as plants, animals and even a child's body grows in spurts.

Joshua's Conclusion

Joshua concludes his book with a heartfelt plea to the Jews, asking them to turn from their foreign gods and serve the Lord only (Joshua 24:14-15). The worship of the Canaanite gods was very demonic. Baal, for example, was the number one god. His name means lord, master or owner. He was the god of weather and fertility and his worship was grossly immoral and extremely bloody. The highest ranking goddess was his mate, Ashtoreth (Judges 2:13; 3:7). She is also involved with fertility. Her name has been corrupted to 'Easter' and her fertility worship included rabbits, eggs and focus on the spring solstice. God decreed the death penalty on those who served these gods because of their evil, immoral, demon-inspired worship.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The battle for Palestine was not just between the Jews and Canaanites. It was really between God and Satan, the kingdom of light and the kingdom of darkness. The gods of the Canaanites were very evil and demonic and involved in many sexually immoral activities. There were literally thousands of them. Elaborate rites of exorcism were developed by the priests to protect the people from the hordes of demonic spirits which attacked the people with distress and disease. There was much fear involved in these animistic beliefs. These fleshly, sensual forms of worship appealed to the Jews so God was very strict about forbidding His people to have anything to do with them, to destroy them and their possessions, and to stay separated from them (Joshua 24:14-15).

For the next thousand years this battle will continue. Satan will use these false religions to tempt and mislead God's people, turning them from the One true God and putting them under His judgment. When they worshipped these false idols they were really worshipping and giving power to the demons behind them (1 Corinthians 10:20). Eventually the Jews will be removed from their land because of this sin, so this plan of Satan's will ultimately succeed. Thus we see that the conflicts between God's people and those who represent the enemy are more than just human clashes; they mirror the warfare going on in the heavenlies between God and Satan.

5. JUDGES (Judges)

After Joshua dies the nation of Israel was ruled by Judges. The time period when the Judges ruled covered roughly 300 years between the time of Joshua and the first king, Saul. It, too, was a time of warfare. However while the Jews followed God to victory in Joshua's time, during the time of the judges they lived in defeat and bondage because of their disobedience and sin. The book contains seven downward spirals of sin and repentance. Their refusal to serve God kept them from having any sustained victory over their enemies.

The book of Judges is proof that God left some of the Canaanites living in the land so following generations of Jews could sharpen their fighting skills and learn how to win their battles with God's help. However, they didn't follow God but lived in their own strength. Without God's help they were unable to achieve victory, it was only when they obeyed and followed Him that they had success. Samson is a perfect example of that. So is the defeat of the Jews by the Philistines and other Canaanite tribes when they fought in the energy of the flesh (Judges 4:1-2). Once they put the Ark of the Covenant in front as they went into battle to use God as a good luck charm (Judges 4:3). They were defeated and lost possession of the Ark for 40 years.

LESSON FOR TODAY: We must take our spiritual combat seriously. We have a formidable enemy, one we can't beat on our own. God is no lucky charm to pull out when things get too bad and use as a magic genie to cure our problems and make life nice for us again. We must be focused in our commitment to be obedient to God in all actions and keep Him foremost in all thoughts and decision. Faith in Him, not in rituals, persons or procedures brings victory.

E. UNITED KINGDOM

As the nation of Israel developed, and as life under the judges continued to bring defeat after defeat, the people turned to the world for an answer to their problems. Rejecting God as their King and defender, they insisted on a human king like the other nations around them. They thought this human solution would bring peace and happiness, but they were wrong. For the next 120 years they were ruled by 3 kings: Saul, David and Solomon.

1. SAUL (1 Samuel 1-15)

Saul was the first king over Israel. He was the choice of the people for he was tall and good looking (1 Samuel 10:23-24) – external traits being all the Jews cared about. He didn't follow God nor did he lead the people to victory in their battles. Pride and insecurity turned him from a shy, humble man to a self-centered tyrant. His insecurity and fear opened him up to demonic oppression.

Stage 1 demonizing

The first stage of his demonic oppression was mild. When he was tormented David's music brought relief (1 Samuel 16:14-23). He opened himself to the influence of demons by his sin. When he allowed his fear to manifest itself in anger and rage, demons fed on his hate and injected more fear and anger into him (1 Samuel 18:10-22; 19:9-10; 20:30-33). He only found relief when David played and sang to him.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God assigns angels to protect us, and He does it in an organized way, not haphazardly. So, too, Satan is methodical in assigning demons to attack us as well. Certain ones are assigned to focus on defeating us, perhaps also to other family members as well. They get to know us and our weaknesses so that they are better able to find chinks in our armor and attack us either head on or in new subtle ways, which often are more successful. They have had thousands of years of experience doing this so we are no match for them. God alone knows us better than they do and only He can help us have victory.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Sin opens the door to demons. Sinful desire is like a prayer, a request which demons are more than willing to fill. It brings our thoughts to life. Anger especially leads to demonizing (Ephesians 4:26-27; Matthew 18:34; II Corinthians 2:10-11). We voluntarily lose self-control and the anger becomes like a prayer, a seeking for something ungodly to empower us. Confess any anger as sin and take back any access you have given to Satan through it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Christian music is a good way to have victory over demonic oppression today as well (Ephesians 5:19; Colossians 3:16). Not only does it reset our mind and thoughts with God's truth, but demons hate hearing Jesus praised and avoid places where that is happening. Playing music that lifts up Jesus when you are attacked is a good way to help win the battle. It is also a profitable practice at night for those who have thoughts and dreams that aren't from God. Letting Christian music play quietly in your room can help with that. If a certain part of your home or property seems to be especially under attack leave some music playing there all day and night. Leaving a light on can have the same affect for demons love darkness and hate the light.

Stage 2 Demonizing

The second stage then followed. Saul became more violent, even trying to kill David while he played music (1 Samuel 18:10-11; 19:7-17; 20:30-33). This shows how demons hate music that praises God and will do anything to silence it if possible. As the demons gather more control over Saul by his continual sin they are able to incite him to seek to kill David. Those in this stage start acting out in their sin area – in violence, greed, lust or whatever area they have opened in their life.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Violence and rage are common effects of demonic presence. That is not to say that Saul, or anyone who has rages, is not responsible for their actions - they are. But at this point it takes more than just “trying harder” to have victory; it takes confessing the sin and rebuking the work of the demons in your life. Then ask God to fill that void. The battle will then begin for they will seek to retake the property in your life they have gained. Using God’s word by quoting His promises is the only way to have sustained victory.

Third Stage Demonizing

The third and final stage of demonizing is then evident in Saul’s life. Deeply destructive and totally ungodly behavior begins as Saul goes to a witch at Endor for advice (1 Samuel 28:8-15). Despite the fact that he knows God forbids this (Deuteronomy 18:9-13) he wants the witch to call up the spirit of Samuel so he can find out information about the future. Assuming a demonic manifestation would appear counterfeiting Samuel, they were both shocked when God allowed Samuel himself to manifest to them. Samuel foretold his future as he wanted, but it was one of death for disobedience.

LESSON FOR TODAY: While God has a plan for our lives that includes life, joy and peace, Satan also has a plan but it includes misery, destruction and death. He can only do what God allows. If he had his own way all Christians would be cruelly killed. He can only do what God allows (Job). Demons seem to bring that which is good for us, but like Satan’s deception in Eden it is really for our destruction (John 8:44). Therefore there can be no compromise in our warfare with Satan and his forces. We cannot give one inch of ground but must tirelessly battle for total freedom.

2. DAVID (1 Samuel 16 – 1 Kings 2)

David was a man after God’s own heart (1 Samuel 13:13-14) who killed a bear and lion by God’s power. He defeated Goliath the same way (1 Samuel 17:45-47). His downfall was his sin with Bathsheba and the subsequent attempted cover-up. That was the result of a pattern of deception and lies that started earlier in his life. Another thread of sin woven throughout the years was lust – unfortunately David had married several wives. Satan had been patiently setting up this snare for years. The trap was set and David was caught. He was victorious over open frontal attacks, but Satan had been developing this noose patiently for quite awhile. That’s why we must always be alert to the smallest sin and get rid of it immediately.

There is another time when Satan deceived and defeated David as well. Satan rose up against Israel and incited David to take a census of Israel.” (1 Chronicles 21:1) David, in pride which was encouraged by Satan, took a census of his soldiers against Joab’s advice and God’s warning (1 Chronicles 21: 2-7). God severely punished Israel with a plague because of it (1 Chronicles 21: 8-29). God allowed an “angel” to bring death to many (1 Chronicles 21:14-27). Was this “angel” who caused death in the plague a demon or an angel of God? Either way, we see Satan putting thoughts of pride into David’s mind which led to death for many.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Demons will work for years setting a Christian up for a fall. We think we can get away with a certain sin, or it isn't a big deal, but gradually it grows until we are captured and defeated by it. Demons are smart and they are patient. Without God's wisdom and help we are sure to fall. Don't give in one inch. Don't allow one sin, however small, to remain and grow. Demons are working on a way to trap you at this very moment so be very alert or you will be defeated. We may be ready for the large battles and faithfully fight them, then fall into a cleverly laid trap of the enemy (1 Timothy 3:7; 2 Timothy 2:26).

3. SOLOMON (1 Kings 2 – 11)

Solomon, too, is an example of someone who was brought down by deception and trickery. Despite all his wisdom and riches, he followed his father's example and married many women (1 Kings 11:3). He went way beyond David in this, though, and these women led him into idolatry and paganism (1 Kings 11:4). He had everything but lost it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Those closest to us can be used to mislead us and tempt us into sin, as Eve did with Adam (Genesis 3:6) and perhaps Job's wife when she told him to curse God and die (Job 2:9). Don't mistrust those closest to you, but if they tempt you to stray from the truth even the littlest bit avoid that trap of Satan's and do what you know God wants.

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. In your own words summarize several of the most important lessons learned about spiritual warfare from the physical warfare recorded in the book of Joshua.
2. What are some of the greatest spiritual battles which you are facing now? What can you learn from Joshua to help you fight them?
3. Why were the Jews able to have victory during the time of Joshua but were defeated during the rule of the Judges? What were the differences in these two times?
4. Demons had a plan to attack Saul and a different plan to attack David. Summarize each plan and explain why it worked.
5. What kind of a plan does Satan use to try to defeat you?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

F. DIVIDED KINGDOM

That which is done outside of God's will always ultimately fail. Having a king didn't solve Israel's woes, it just added more to them – as God had told them it would. They failed to put God first and replaced Him with greed and self-centeredness. Before long the nation divided into two – Israel (northern 10 tribes) and Judah (southern 2 tribes). Two hundred years later the north went into captivity and a hundred and fifty years later the south followed. This didn't happen without many warnings from God, though. Elijah was just one of many, many men God sent to try to turn the Jews back to faithfully serving Him alone.

1. ISRAEL & JUDAH (1 Kings 12 – 2 Kings 24)

Elijah and the priests of Baal

Satan and his demons love blood, pain, suffering and death. This is the opposite of God who loves life, light, peace and joy. Destruction and misery characterize the work of Satan and his demons. The demonically empowered pagan religions in Israel were full of blood, suffering and death. The priests of Baal cut themselves to call on their gods to start their altar on fire when Elijah challenged them to a power encounter to see whose god was the greatest (1 Kings 18:28). They shed the blood of innocent victims to their gods as well. Sacrificing children to their detestable, blood-thirsty gods was common (Jeremiah 32:35; 2 Kings 16:3; 17:17; 21:6; Ezekiel 20:31). Demons demand sacrifice; they thrive on pain and love to cause suffering and misery, even death.

Victory over Moab

A clear example of this is when Israel defeated the Moabites and drove them back into their own walled cities. The Jew's power from their God was greater than that of Satan and those who called on him. But then their king sacrificed his own firstborn son before everyone on the city wall (2 Kings 3:25-27) and the tide of the battle turned. They now had power to drive back the Jews and defeat them. What made the difference? Where did that power come from? By appealing to demons in this way they received their help in battle. If the Jews had understood the spiritual warfare that was behind the physical battle they could have called on their God and He would have given them the power they needed to have victory (1 John 4:4). But they fought in their own strength and lost the battle.

LESSON FOR TODAY: We, too, need to know and practice spiritual warfare so we have victory. Many of God's people live in defeat because they do not understand the way the enemy works or the principles of spiritual warfare and how to have victory (2 Corinthians 2:5-11).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan and his demons still love blood, darkness, misery and suffering. They feed off of the music, movies, dress and lifestyles that focus on darkness. They go wild for human blood and are behind the recent rise in incidents of teens cutting themselves today (Mark 5:5). They love to cause pain of any sort, including physical pain (Matthew 17:15). Perhaps that is one of the reasons for the rise of interest in tattoos today despite the pain of getting them. By the way, the Bible clearly forbids tattoos (Leviticus 19:28).

While we see Satan and his forces at work throughout the pages of the Old Testament, we also see God's greater power through those who are obedient to Him. Elijah's victory over the prophets of Baal and Ashtoreth in the time of Ahab and Jezebel is one example (1 Kings 18:16-46). God takes on the gods behind the false religions, the ones empowering the pagan idols and clearly defeats each and every one of them.

The False Prophets

God allowed demons to mislead the false prophets. As with all things, He brought good out of it for His people (Romans 8:28). He allowed it because they couldn't do it without His permission (1 Kings 22:19-23) in order to use the results for His purpose. When the king followed the Satan-inspired laws of his prophets he was destroyed, which is what God wanted (1 Kings 22:1-28).

LESSON FOR TODAY: When we are able to see behind the scenes we learn that God is using Satan's evil for His good (Romans 8:28). He allowed a demon of lying and deception to cause false prophets to give a wrong message to Ahab, thus luring him to God's judgment of death on him (1 Kings 22:19-23). God uses all things for His plan and purpose (Romans 8:28). (See notes with Job for more about this.) Sometimes it is hard to understand why God doesn't answer or deliver, why He allows the enemy to work as he does. Always remember God is totally in control. He allows man a free will choice but ultimately uses all that happens for His final purpose.

God blessed faithfulness

Hezekiah tried to buy off King Sennacherib of Assyria when he attacked them to defeat them (2 Kings 18:14-16). Sennacherib took the money but attacked the Jews anyway (2 Kings 18:17).

Jehosaphat, in a similar situation, turned to God instead of trying make a deal with his enemy. God delivered him (2 Chronicles 20:17) and the nation responded in praise and thanksgiving to God (2 Chronicles 20:12). When God didn't deliver, though, the prophets stayed faithful to God even though they were greatly persecuted and often killed (Hebrews 11:32-38).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Often we are tempted to compromise with sin, to back off when the battle gets intense, to fade a bit in our commitment to God – and when we do the pressure from the enemy seems to let up. So we back off a bit more from our obedience to God and enjoy the rest from battle. What is happening, though, is that we are trying to buy off the enemy. He'll take what we give him, but he'll soon be back stronger than ever and then we will be in worse shape than before. Surrender to the enemy is certainly one way to find relief from conflict, but then there is no spiritual growth, no fruit of the spirit, no reward in eternity and no peace in this life. The only way for victory is to trust God and continue to stand against the enemy (Ephesians 6:11-14).

Angels protect believers

Throughout all the Jews' battles, God was with His people and helping those who turned to Him. He often used angels to protect His people and bring judgment on His enemies (2 Kings 6:15-17; 19:35; 2:11; Psalm 34:7; 68:17; 91:11; Zechariah 1:8; 6:1-7; Revelation 19:11).

LESSON FOR TODAY: God's angels today fight for us as they did for God's people in times past. They protect us at times and in ways we aren't aware of (Hebrews 1:14; Matthew 26:53). We don't see them or if we do they appear as human beings (Hebrews 13:2). We aren't to pray to them, for we are fellow warriors in the fight to advance God's kingdom against the kingdom of darkness. It's good to know we aren't ever alone in our battles, though.

Prophets foretell Satan's defeat

Even though it seemed like Satan's kingdom was advancing and defeating God's kingdom, God foretold their ultimate defeat several times. First, God decreed through Isaiah that Satan would be brought down to the grave, to the depths of the pit (Isaiah 14:12-20). Next, God says Satan and his forces will be bound in a dungeon, shut up in prison for many days (consigned to hades for the Millennium, Isaiah 24:21-23). Third, God promises (Isaiah 27:1) that the serpent or dragon (Satan, Revelation 12:7-12) will be defeated by the sword of God's Word (Revelation 19:15). Through Ezekiel God says Satan will be cast from heaven to earth by God's power (Ezekiel 28:11-19).

LESSON FOR US: While Satan is aware of the fate that awaits him, it just causes him to act with more fury as the end comes closer. He even has deceived many of his demons into thinking their cause will one day be victorious. A good way of defeating them when attacked is to read these passages and others in Revelation (Revelation 20:1-3, 7-10; etc.) about their coming defeat, about God's power over them (1 John 4:4). Use God's Word to make sure they know they are defeated by God's power and must submit to His authority. It is good for us to remember that God is the most powerful One and ultimate victor in our daily battles as well.

2. CAPTIVITY (2 Kings 25, Jeremiah, Daniel)

Israel and Judah are taken into captivity

Because of their sin, the north and then the southern nations of Israel and Judah went into captivity. They gave in to the forces of Satan and, instead of battling him, joined his army. They worshipped the demonic gods of the Canaanites as well as the stars in the sky, sacrificed their children to these idols and became involved in occult practices (2 Kings 17:16-18). A holy God cannot allow sin, even in His own people – especially in His own people (1 Peter 4:17).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Child sacrifice was common in all the Canaanite religions. It shows the horrible dark hold Satan had on these people. Satan and demons love pain, suffering and death, and would reward people who did these things for them (1 Kings 18:28, Mark 5:5, Matthew 17:15). We see this hideous practice resurfacing today in Satanism, satanic cults and in many witchcraft cults around the world. Do not be surprised by it – there is no sin or evil Satan is not capable of. Do not be scared by it – God is much, much greater and promises to protect us. Stay close to Him, ask for His power and trust in His wisdom.

For 70 years the Jews were in captivity to other nations who took them from their homeland. Daniel was one of those taken to Babylon as a young boy. He spent his life there in service to God and his new country. Throughout all of his life he was involved in spiritual warfare. We gain valuable insight into the battle in the heavenlies from an event in his life (Daniel 10:2-14). Towards the end of his life he was fasting and praying for wisdom from God. After 24 days without an answer an angel appeared to him and told him that the first day he started praying God sent a messenger to answer Daniel's prayer. However for 3 weeks the demon who was the territorial ruler of Persia fought against this messenger angel to keep him from getting to Daniel. Michael came to join in the battle so the heavenly courier from God was able to defeat the demonic oppression. He was then able to come to Daniel and complete his mission. While this sounds like a strange event, it sheds much light on the spiritual battles we fight. These kinds of things probably happen around us all the time but we aren't aware of them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: *There are several lessons for us in this account. First, we gain insight into the organization of Satan's forces. Satan arranges his demons in the same manner God has angels organized - in a military-like structure. These are similar to soldiers in an army: generals, colonels, majors, lieutenants, sergeants, corporals, privates, etc. (Ephesians 6:12). Usually a "strong man" (or ruler) is assigned to a task, and he has lesser demons under his command to help in the work (Matthew 12:25-29; Daniel 10:2-6, 12-14). The names of these demons usually refer to what they do: "Fear," "Anger," "Lust," "Pride," "Deception," etc.. Satan assigns powerful demons as leaders to oversee the work against various people groups and geographical areas as well. Persia was controlled by demons who were organized under the command of a very powerful demon who took the role as the "prince of Persia". We can be assured that all countries, people groups and major movements among mankind have a structure of demons assigned to defeat and control them. So do churches, Christian ministries, families and of course individuals as well. No one gets overlooked, and those doing the Lord's work receive special attention! Understanding these things is important for us to know what we are fighting against and how to pray for God's power and protection.*

LESSON FOR TODAY: *We also see the importance of prayer, and that God answers it. Even if it seems to take a while, persevere and await God's answer. It has been correctly said that prayer is not preliminary to the battle, prayer is the battle. So persevere in your prayer and warfare. The warfare we go through here is just a small reflection of what is taking place in the heavenlies. You are not alone in your battles. All God's people are attacked, and angels and demons are constantly in conflict in the unseen world around us. If it seems you are alone, or something must be wrong because you face these things more than others remember that all who seek to serve and advance God's kingdom will be attacked.*

The influence of Babylon on the Jews

Babylonian beliefs influenced the Jews in their beliefs as well. While in captivity in Babylon they picked up many of the beliefs of the Babylonians. The Babylonians were very superstitious and their religion was based on fear. They believed the gods sent demons to cause illness and difficulties when these gods were offended by something someone did, so their goal was to find which god was upset and appease him by ritualistic formulas, incantations, rites, amulets, charms or sacrifices.

LESSON FOR TODAY: *Fear is still one of Satan's very best tools and often the name of the ruling demon of many who are demonized. "Fear" and "Death" are common, powerful, and often work together to bring the destruction of their host. Demons commonly instill fear in those they attack and use it to control the person (Romans 8:15). Demons put the fear of David into Saul (I Samuel 18:10-15) and put fear and terror into Eliaphaz by gliding by his face (Job 4:15). Anything not of faith is sin (Romans 14:23). God does not give us fear (II Timothy 1:7; Romans 8:15), so if you experience fear realize it is not from God but from Satan. This doesn't mean it is always through demonizing, for you can be attacked with fear without being demonized.*

Fear takes root when we choose to focus on circumstances instead of God. Peter walking on water is a good example. When his eyes were on Jesus his faith was strong, but when he looked at the waves they grew in his mind to be greater than Jesus' power and he started sinking. He did the right thing, though, and put his eyes back on Jesus.

Trust is the antidote to fear. How can we understand trust, what it means and how it works? I think understanding how a family should work is the best answer. God established a family relationship to answer all those questions. He is the Father, we are the children. Do your children trust you? What do they have to do? What do you expect of them? It's exactly the

same. Jesus says we are to be like little children in order to learn faith and trust. Let your children teach you. Put yourself in their position - with a Perfect Father.

When you notice fear attacking you defeat it by quoting scripture. When Jesus was tempted He quoted Scripture to have victory over Satan's temptations. Paul says our only offensive weapon is the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God. Psalm 119:9,11 tell us that it's through God's Word that we have victory. When you have these thoughts and attacks use Scripture to have victory. Ask God to give you some verses that will help against these things, write them down and memorize them. Say them over and over when these thoughts attack you. That is the only way to victory, and God guarantees it will work! Here are some verses you may want to use: Proverbs 3:25; Isaiah 14:3; Psalm 34:4; Joshua 1:9; 10:8; 23:9-11; Leviticus 26:8; Exodus 14:13; I Samuel 17:45-47; II Samuel 22:33-35,40-41; Philippians 4:6-7; 4:13; 2 Timothy 1:7 and Exodus 14:13.

Watch for fear in your own life and look for it when you minister, in spiritual warfare or in other areas as well. Fear is something we all must learn to have victory over. Every person who ever lived faced a battle with fear.

3. RESTORATION (Ezra, Nehemiah)

After 70 years in foreign captivity some of the Jews were allowed to return to their home land and rebuilt Jerusalem. Several small groups made the journey home, but most stayed in Babylon where there was better financial prosperity. Those who returned, like Nehemiah and Ezra, were attacked from without and within. Externally they faced ridicule, criticism, mockery and threats of violence from neighboring nations who didn't want the Jews returning to their land. Internally they faced discouragement, gossip and criticism from fellow Jews. It was a battle with two fronts.

LESSON FOR TODAY: We, too, face a two-pronged attack from our enemy. He hits us head on with external problems and painful circumstances, criticism and rejection from others and obstacles in our way. Internally we fight against fear, anger, greed, lust, pride, self-centeredness, laziness and many more. It's hard enough to battle on one front, but to fight both battles well at the same time is truly difficult. In fact, it's impossible without God's help. Without learning to depend on Him, remember His promises, and keep our eyes on His person, we won't be able to have victory.

For five hundred more years the Jews lived in Palestine, their home land. They rebuilt their civilization but never attained their freedom or the prosperity they once had. Greece took over from Babylon and Persia, but their religion was similar to Babylon's, for they got much of it from the Babylonians. Greece adopted many Babylonian beliefs and practices and included them in their own religious system. They used concoctions, incantations, invocations (spoken or written on paper and hung around the neck), amulets, recipes (mixing oils, burning roots, sprinkling water, etc.) and blowing upon the person to remove demons. Many of these practices eventually became part of the Jews rituals at that time. To most Jews of the period, as indeed to most men of that time, the world was full of supernatural agencies. As there were angels to accomplish every good act, so there were demons or evil spirits to perpetuate every evil deed or to prompt every sinful impulse. These were an important part of their world view. Trying to live at peace with them, or manipulate these forces for their own benefit, was an important part of daily life and religion.

CONCLUDING THE OLD TESTAMENT

Warfare – no one wants it. But we will experience much of it if we will follow God. The only ones who aren't in a battle are those who are in Satan's army or captured by him. Any and all who follow God will have to fight. But God will bring victory. D Martin Lloyd-Jones in "God's Battle, Not Ours" writes: "All the battles of Israel, if they could have seen it, were not their battles, they were the battles of the Lord. They were involved because they were His people. This is God's battle, we are given the privilege of being in it and of fighting as individual soldiers, but God's honor is involved in it all. He cannot allow this to fall because His character, His glory, and His honor are involved at every point. Be strong in the Lord; remember that He is there, and that it is His battle."

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. The time of the captivity and return was a sad time in Jewish history. If God was greater then why did the Jews so often live in defeat?
2. Why do God's people today often live in defeat?
3. What are some of the most important lessons you have learned about spiritual warfare from the Old Testament?
4. How do these apply to your life?

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

If you have completed this portion of Spiritual Warfare in the Bible please let me know. I would enjoy knowing what you thought of it, what you learned, and what I can do to improve it. Also let me know if you have any questions or prayer requests. Thanks and may God continue to bless you as you serve Him. Jerry Schmoyer jerry@schmoyer.net

II. LIFE OF JESUS

The coming of Jesus Christ was the invasion of the kingdom of Satan by the kingdom of God in the person of the true King. His incarnation was an infiltration, a landing behind enemy lines. The enemy mustered all the opposition it could to stop Him. He came to rescue mankind which had been held captive in sin since the time of Adam and Eve. He provided the only way man could get out of bondage. Jesus came to end Satan's undisputed rule (Matthew 12:28-29). Darkness fought against the Light, but praise God the light was greater (John 1:5; 3:19; 8:12)!

A. BIRTH OF JESUS

1. 400 SILENT YEARS

For four hundred years, since they were taken into foreign captivity, the Jews languished in defeat and bondage, first to the Greeks, then to the Romans but always to Satan and his forces. The people living in those days were well aware that the world was full of supernatural forces: angels to accomplish good and evil spirits to promote and perpetuate sin. They attributed sin, sickness and even accidents to the work of demons.

According to the Jewish Talmud, the Jews living at the time when Jesus came to earth believed that evil spirits were innumerable. The air was packed tight with them. Many incantations or charms were available to exorcise demons from parts of one's house, food or person. Blindness, headaches, epilepsy, leprosy, croup, fever, forgetfulness, nightmares, depression, madness, diseases of the brain, and diseases of the inner parts of the body were all thought to be caused by demons. The techniques used by the Jews to cast out spirits included curses, trumpets, fumigations, angelology, herbs (roots), incantations, poems, music, talismans, magical stones, invocations, the laying on of hands with prayer, and adjurations (verbal commands). Justin, an early church leader and writer, reported that the Jews were only able to have success in driving out demons when they did it in God's name, but even then they didn't have nearly the success the new followers of Jesus had.

2. JESUS' BIRTH (Matthew 1-2; Luke 1-2)

Jesus' birth was truly an infiltration of enemy-occupied territory, a landing behind the lines of a baby who would change everything. While the accounts of Jesus' birth speak of a quiet, peaceful event, reading between the lines shows there was much conflict involved both in heaven and on earth. The news of Mary's pregnancy before the consummation of her marriage with Joseph clearly led to community rejection. Strong opposition to Jesus' coming is seen in the fact that there was no comfortable place to stay in Bethlehem, the religious leaders failed to come see the baby even though they knew when and where He was born (Matthew 2:1-7), and Herod's attempted to kill Him (Matthew 2:16).

There were others who were very willing to recognize this baby as God Himself come to earth. God affirmed Jesus' deity through the words of Gabriel to Mary, Joseph and the shepherds. Each of them believed. Simeon and Anna in the temple knew who He was, and the Magi from the east were clear confirmations that God had come to earth in the form of a baby (Matthew 1:18-2:12).

B. JESUS GOES PUBLIC

1. JESUS' BAPTISM (Matthew 3:1-17)

To escape being killed by Herod, Joseph took Mary and Joseph to Egypt for several years. Then, in obedience to God's direction, he took his little family back to Nazareth (Matthew 2:13-23). The only event recorded during Jesus' childhood was when He went to the temple at the age of 12 (Luke 1:41-52). We have no way of knowing how much Jesus understood of His origins or future while growing up. We can confidently assume He grew up experiencing all the feelings, emotions and temptations any normal human being would go through (Hebrews 4:15; 2:18). He voluntarily chose not to use any part of His deity which would have made His life as a human any easier (Philippians 2:7); He laid aside all knowledge and power, the ability to be present anywhere, anything that would have given him an advantage that other human beings did not have. Clearly, though, He grew up with a deep faith and attained a clear understanding of God's Word through study and training (Luke 2:52).

It's hard to know just how aware He was of His deity and purpose in coming, but there is no doubt the angels and demons were quite aware. Jesus didn't get married when other boys would have (late teens or early twenties) but stayed single, knowing God had something else for Him. When He reached thirty (Luke 3:23), the age when young men would enter the priesthood, He felt God's Spirit leading Him to leave His family and home and go to where His cousin John the baptizer was preaching (Luke 1:1-60).

While He was there He publically committed Himself to the work He had volunteered for before the world was created – providing redemption for us (Ephesians 1:3-4). This was the only way God could give us a free will yet still have us in heaven with Him. He became our substitute, our sacrifice, the "lamb of God" as John calls Him (John 1:29, 36). When He was baptized God Himself affirmed His approval and sent the Holy Spirit to fill Jesus in a special way and enable Him to do the work of the Messiah/Christ (Luke 3:21-22).

While the people watching Him be baptized by John may not have been aware of the great significance of what was happening, the spiritual forces, both angelic and demonic, were totally aware of what was occurring. The enemy knew what they must do – defeat the Messiah before He defeats them! The battle was on.

LESSON FOR TODAY: When God calls us to come follow Him and serve Him, there is a time we need to make that commitment public. It could be by baptism or some other way of letting others know of our promise to live for Him and follow Him in all we do. This usually brings opposition. Even Jesus was greatly attacked after His baptismal statement of commitment.

2. JESUS' TEMPTATION (Matthew 4:1-11)

Immediately following His baptism Jesus was led by the Holy Spirit, the 'dove' who had just descended on Him, into the desert (Matthew 4:1). He needed time to focus on what was about to come, to strengthen His spirit and commitment. He needed time alone with His Father, something that would happen time after time during His earthly life. After 40 days of fasting and praying Jesus was tempted by Satan. Whether He waited because God restrained him or because he wanted to hit Jesus when He was weakest is unknown. Satan, who had been opposing God's plan of redemption from the beginning (Genesis 3:14-15), now focuses his attacks on Jesus.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Note that Jesus was in the perfect center of God's will when He was tempted, for God Himself led Him to the desert (Matthew 4:1). Being tempted to sin does not mean we are out of God's will or not following closely to Him. Often the opposite is true, like with Jesus. It is because we are following God closely that we are attacked the hardest. Be aware so you aren't take by surprise. Don't think it is a bad sign that you are tempted. Being attacked is actually a good sign for Satan only attacks those who are doing damage to his kingdom. When you aren't being attacked is the time to make sure you haven't drifted from the conflict (Luke 6:26).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Note that Satan attacks immediately, as soon as Jesus commits to doing God's will by being baptized. For us, too, the attacks come when we move in the direction of following God. When we are not as close to God, Satan and his forces leave us alone, but when our devotion increases so do the enemy's attacks. We soon discover that when we fade a bit in our walk with the Lord then the pressure decreases, tempting us to follow God, but not quite so closely!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Notice, too, that this battle with Satan was God's perfect will for Jesus. "Jesus was led by the Spirit into the desert to be tempted by the devil" (Matthew 4:1). God does not prevent our battles, no matter how hard we pray for that to happen, but He does help us through them. So it is better to focus on fighting them in His strength than looking for ways to avoid them. They are part of God's will for us because they strength us and show us that His grace is sufficient, as was true of the Jews fighting for the Promised Land behind Joshua's leadership.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The place where Jesus was sent by God to fast, pray and battle Satan was the "desert," considered the abode of demons (Matthew 12:43). Sometimes God leads us into strongholds of Satan's so we can do battle for Him, knowing we can experience have victory through His power (1 John 4:4). We aren't to run from such encounters but face them with His strength.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Fasting can be a useful tool in spiritual warfare, not because our suffering earns God's pity so He is more apt to answer our prayers, but because it is a way of denying our flesh and putting spiritual things before personal needs. It clears our mind and helps us focus on the battle at hand. Hunger reminds us of our weakness, our need of His strength and it reminds us to pray. It frees up more time to spend in prayer as well. We must be sure God wants us to fast before we do so, and we must use wisdom in what kind of a fast it is and how long it lasts, but it is a weapon we should make us of. Jesus used it often.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus faced these human temptations as a man just like us. He did not rely on His deity to make it through. He was attacked just as Adam had been, but unlike Adam He did not sin and therefore He won back what Adam lost (Romans 5:12-21). We, too, can have victory through God's power, just as Jesus did. The same resource is available to us!

The first temptation was for physical needs – Jesus was hungry after 40 days of not eating. Jesus could turn the stones to bread, but that was not God's will. This was a legitimate need but not God's way of meeting it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Sin is using an illegitimate way to meet a legitimate need. Hunger is a legitimate need, but Jesus must meet it in God's way, not in his own or Satan's way. When tempted look for the legitimate need behind it (peace, comfort, companionship, joy, etc.) and seek to have that need met God's way instead of taking a 'shortcut' that is sinful.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Building on what was just said, the fact that we have a legitimate need doesn't mean it has to be immediately met. The very common "entitlement mentality"

today seems to say we should have everything we want as soon as we want it, and that parents, God, the government, or life itself owes it to us! That is a very unbiblical attitude and quite dangerous. In fact, it's the very lie Satan used with Eve in Eden – "You are entitled to this fruit!"

Jesus had victory over Satan's temptations by quoting God's Word each time He was tempted. That is the only way to have victory. Jesus knew the Bible well enough to quote the book of Deuteronomy three times.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Quoting Scripture is our best weapon against Satan's attacks against us as well. Paul says our only offensive weapon is the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God (Ephesians 6:17). Psalm 119:9-11 tell us that it's through God's Word that we have victory. When thoughts or temptations you don't want come into your mind, use Scripture to have victory. There is power in God's Word that is lacking in our own words (Hebrews 4:12). Reminding demons of God's truth shows them they must submit to it, and helps us put our faith in Him and not give in to the lie behind the temptation. It allows our mind to explain reality to our emotions. Always have some verses that speak to your situation memorized or written down where you can reference them at any time. Use them as soon as you sense opposition coming against your thoughts.

The **second temptation** Satan used was an appeal to Jesus' pride. He was due recognition from all so Satan suggested an easy way to get it - by throwing Himself down from the highest part of the temple and letting angels come rescue Him in the sight of the watching crowds. If Satan wanted to defeat Jesus, why would he offer to help Him have everyone come worship Him? While this might have seemed like something that would benefit Jesus, it really was a subtle way to give him recognition without having to go to the cross. This would have been a short-cut to His Kingship – giving Him the throne of Israel without having to go through the agony of crucifixion. But if He had taken this route, then there would be no salvation for us – and that was exactly why Satan tempted Him in this way. He was willing for Jesus to have His temporary throne on earth as long as He didn't pay for our sins in the process.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Pride is what motivated Satan to sin and rebel against God (Isaiah 14:13-14). It is still one of his best tools against us today (1 Timothy 3:6). There is no short-cut to maturity or spirituality, no easy way to grow. The way up is down. God exalts those who humble themselves (James 4:10; 1 Peter 5:6). He humbles those who exalt themselves (Luke 18:14). Pride is self-centeredness, a focus on ones self. It is pride if we think we are better than others or if we think we are worse than others. Either extreme is pride, an inordinate attention to self. Either extreme is wrong. Satan doesn't care which direction he gets us to fall as long as we fall!

Satan's **third temptation** was a final desperate measure. He put it all on the line, something he didn't have to do with Adam and probably didn't want to do with Jesus. But everything was at stake so he offered Jesus ruler ship of the whole world if Jesus would bow down to Satan. Ruler ship of the world was what Jesus had come to win back, and Satan was offering to give it to Jesus for free. But there was one condition – Jesus would have to recognize Satan as His authority instead of God the Father. Again we see that the end does not justify the means.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan seems to offer people today everything they want if they turn to this world system. He received ownership from Adam of the world system of values and motives as it operates today (John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11). He tries to get us to think that we, too, can have everything we want. Adam and Eve believed this lie, and many today believe it as well. But it is a lie. It is Satan's bait to trap people into bondage.

When Satan was unable to defeat Jesus after three tries he left, and the angels came to minister to Jesus (Matthew 4:11). Satan wasn't done, though. Luke 4:13 says he left but would return at an "opportune time." He is never done, he never stops working against Jesus.

LESSON FOR TODAY: There will be lulls in demonic oppression against us. Often it seems oppression comes in cycles or waves. Some times things are very difficult, then it seems the attacks get milder or even disappear for awhile. But they always return. We will never have ultimate, total victory in this life. If you are going through a difficult time remember that it will one day lessen. If you are not going through a time of challenges and attacks, be prepared for when it returns. Don't be surprised or discouraged when it returns, either. Use this rest time to refresh and prepare for the battle when it starts again.

C. SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN JESUS' MINISTRY

While Satan continued to harass Jesus, especially through his demons, no direct overt attack is recorded until Jesus is half way through His ministry, about a year and a half after Jesus' baptism and temptation.

1. JESUS' FIRST DELIVERANCE (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37)

Jesus had proclaimed Himself as the Messiah ('Christ') for two years. Some responded but most turned away, following the lead of the religious rulers who completely rejected Jesus and His claims. He did miracles to authenticate His authority and to show His power. If He can heal a body then He can certainly heal a soul as well.

One day Jesus went to Capernaum (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37), His new home and the home of several of His disciples. While teaching in the synagogue on the Sabbath a demonized man cried out, "What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who You are – the Holy One of God!" (Mark 1:24) Jesus commanded the demon to be quiet and leave the man, which he did after shaking the man and causing a loud shriek to be heard. Naturally, everyone was amazed and word of this soon spread throughout the whole area. With this event the battle between Satan and Jesus moved to a new level.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The Greek word δοιμονιζομαι ("demonizing") refers to one who is heavily impacted by demons. It is used 15 times in the New Testament. The term "demonizing" does not differentiate between possession (demons within) or influence (demons without). God doesn't make that clarification or distinction, and we shouldn't try to make it, either. We don't need to know the exact extent of demonizing, just that it is taking place. The cause is the same, as are the symptoms and so is the cure. In the spiritual realm there are no clear-cut divisions like we try to make (demons 'within' or 'without', etc.). There are, of course, degrees of demonizing depending on the person, the demons involved, the access, and other factors, but it isn't always possible or necessary to pinpoint what is 'without' and what is 'within'.

Other words the Bible uses for 'demonizing' are "entered in" (as when Satan entered into Judas - John 13:27) and "filled" (Acts 5:5 about Ananias and Saphira, the same word that is used of believers being filled with the Holy Spirit). The common denominator is that the person being demonized usually doesn't separate his own consciousness from the demonic influence. He assumes that the thoughts and feelings the demon feeds him are his own. A person always has a free will to turn to God for help, but when followed these demonic impulses bring one deeper and deeper into bondage. Perhaps demonizing can be better understood by thinking of it

as a kind of spiritual hypnotism from within. Hypnotism of any kind is something for God's people to avoid (Psalm 54:4-5; Joshua 1:8; Philippians 4:8).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Demons can impact believers as they do unbelievers. Note that the demonized man was not a pagan who worshipped Satan. He was a faithful Jew who regularly attended synagogue, someone familiar to the people there and whom no one previously had suspected of being demonized. Probably he wasn't aware that the struggles he had in life were caused by demons. This happened at other times as well (Mark 5:39). While we don't know this man's exact spiritual state, this still brings up the question of believers being demonized. While there is general agreement that unbelievers can be demonized, some don't believe that can happen to believers because believers belong to Jesus. That is true, but demonizing doesn't imply ownership, just influence.

As long as we are in this body we still have a sin nature, a capacity to sin just the same as we did before salvation. Salvation creates a new spiritual nature within us. But the old capacity to sin still remains. It is in this area, this sin nature, this capacity to sin, that demons work. Salvation does not remove our capacity to sin (sin nature) but gives us a new nature so we don't have to sin but can live in obedience to God. Believers can still sin after salvation as they did before. It is in this area of our 'flesh' or sin nature that demons work. Our new nature is greater but doesn't take away our free will choice to still function in our sin nature. Paul's struggle as recorded in Romans 7 describes this well.

The Bible makes no distinction between believers and unbelievers as far as demonizing is concerned. In fact, the Bible refers to many believers who were demonized: Paul's thorn in the flesh was a demon (II Corinthians 12:7), King Saul was a believer (I Samuel 11:6) and was obviously demonized (I Samuel 16:14-23), David was motivated by Satan to take a census of the people (I Chronicles 21:1ff; II Samuel 24:1ff), Ananias and Saphira were believers (Acts 4:32-35) but allowed Satan to "fill" them (Acts 5:3), and Peter was Satan's spokesman in tempting Jesus to not go to the cross (Matthew 16:23). Paul warns believers to not give Satan a "foothold" in their life (Ephesians 4:26-27), showing such a thing is possible. Jesus Himself called deliverance "the children's bread" (Matthew 15:22-28), meaning it was for His children. A Christian can receive another spirit (II Corinthians 11:2-4) and there are other examples of believers being demonized (Luke 13:10-16; I Corinthians 5:4-5). Christians are warned to guard against this (I Peter 5:8-9; Ephesians 6:10-18).

A believer belongs to the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan cannot own him as he did before salvation (I John 4:4), but he can still influence him, "demonize" him. When the words 'possessed' or 'oppressed' are used, then the question is asked if a believer can be 'possessed.' To answer that then 'possessed' must be defined. The Bible simply does not define it, nor does it even talk about 'possession' – just 'demonizing' which means being influenced by a demon.

A Christian has every right and resource to be free from this demonizing, however. Property which you own can be trespassed on by another person, but you have every right and resource to put him off your property. You just need to learn how to do it. That's what spiritual warfare is all about.

LESSON FOR TODAY: It is not coincidental that it was Jesus' presence and teaching that caused the demon to react (see also Mark 5:39). When Jesus is lifted up and His Word communicated, demons who are present will be affected for they can't stand to hear these things. Correct teaching of God's Word is essential for a church or individual to grow spiritually. Don't be surprised when it stirs up opposition against a person, family or church. Satan will do what he can to silence it, to keep the light from shining in his kingdom of darkness.

LESSON FOR TODAY: How many demons were involved in this incident? "What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who You are – the Holy One of God!" Usually there is more than one demon involved when someone is demonized, there is a structured organization. Satan organizes his demons in the same manner God has angels organized - in a military-like structure. These are similar to generals, colonels, majors, lieutenants, sergeants, corporals, privates, etc. (Ephesians 6:12). Usually a "strong man" (or ruler) is assigned to a task, and he has lesser demons under his command to help in the work (Matthew 12:25-29; Daniel 10:2-6, 12-14). The names of these demons usually refer to their work ("Fear," "Anger," "Lust," "Pride," "Deception," etc.). In this case the ruling demon is the one speaking ("I") for the others who are part of the group working against this man ("us").

LESSON FOR TODAY: While the demon(s) in this man try to bait Jesus into communicating with them, He refuses to do so. Do not converse with demons, either by having them give messages to a person's mind or to speak verbally through a person's vocal cords. The object in deliverance is not to get in contact with demons but to remove them. It is not to get them to speak but to cause them to be silent! Communication with them makes you a medium and God's words forbids that (Deuteronomy 18:9-13).

There are good reasons God forbids communication with them. Neither Jesus (Mark 1:25) nor Paul would (Acts 16:17) encouraged them to speak. They are liars and deceivers (John 8:44) and you can't believe what they say. God wants you to be in touch with Him only (Deuteronomy 4:24). Through the Holy Spirit we have access to all truth and power (John 8:31-32; I Corinthians 12:7-11). By communicating with demons you give them recognition, allow them to stall and deceive, give them the focus and attention they crave, make things much harder on all people involved, and open yourself up to pride. Communicating with demons can be a temptation to pride and we can find ourselves drawn into working by the power of our own flesh. We don't need any information they might give us, we walk by faith, not by sight (2 Corinthians 5:7). The only time Jesus ever talked to a demon was for the purpose of showing those who were watching how many demons were involved and therefore how great His power was (Mark 5:9). Eve got into a dialogue with Satan and was deceived by him (Genesis 3:1-16 – for more about this see THE BATTLE BEGINS Genesis 3:8-15). If there is something you need to know, God will show it. Don't ever expect a demon to give information that will lead to his own defeat!

LESSON FOR TODAY: When the demons left this man they shook him and caused him to scream loudly. Sometimes demons will try to manifest in ways that are intended to bring fear to a person, but Jesus never allowed demonic manifestations to get out of hand and neither should we. In Jesus' name bind them, take away their power to resist, and command them to obey immediately and quietly when commanded in Jesus' name. We do not have to put up with their antics for they are only done to distract and to cause fear in us and recognition of their power. We know God is greater than they are (I John 4:4).

LESSON FOR TODAY: The first occasion of an act or event in the Bible often sets the prototype for others to come, and that is true of this first deliverance in the Caernaum synagogue. The exact methods used by Jesus to cast out spirits are mentioned in only five specific cases and in only one generalized case (which appears first on the following list):

Matt 8:16: "he cast out the spirits with a word."

Matt 15:28: "Then Jesus answered her, 'O woman, great is your faith! Be it done for you as you desire.' And her daughter was healed instantly."

Mark 1:25: "But Jesus rebuked him, saying, 'Be silent, and come out of him!'"

Mark 5:8: "For he had said to him, 'Come out of the man, you unclean spirit!'"

Mark 9:25: "He rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to it, 'You dumb and deaf spirit, I command you, come out of him, and never enter him again.'"

Luke 13:12-13: "He called her and said to her, 'Woman, you are freed from your infirmity.' And he laid his hands upon her"

So generally speaking, it is true to say that Jesus cast out the spirits "with a word." This refers to a short sentence or phrase according to the five examples given above, and not to some singular word. And what was that "phrase?" According to the above examples it was: "Be it done," "Come out (3 times)" and "You are freed." Jesus cast out spirits by a verbal command. In three of these cases, the command was, "Come out" (exerchomai ek), which is an adjuration. In the remaining case[s] it was, "Be it done," [and "You are freed,"] which are decrees of accomplishment. In two of these cases, He accompanied the verbal command with a verbal "rebuke." This rebuke was once stated as being, "Be silent." Hence, the commands used by Jesus contained variety, being tailored to fit the occasion or the subject. He used no rigid formula, no incantations, no rituals, no charms, etc. as did Hebrew exorcists. There are no special prayers, no 'magic' words or phrases to use or pray, no set way of "doing deliverance." Each situation is different, but all include the believer using Jesus' power and authority to stop the demons' work and to command them to be gone. Be sensitive to God's Spirit when dealing with such things and proceed as you feel Him leading you. Don't expect Him to lead the same as He does others, nor will He always lead you the same way. It's not our words or actions that bring deliverance, it's always and only His power. Just tap into it!

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING. At the end of each major section in this paper you will find questions to help you remember and apply what you have learned. You can look back through what you have read for the answers if need be. You need a Bible, a notebook and a pen to do these questions.

If you want to send me your answers I would be glad to read them and offer comments or suggestions that might help you. You can write me at jerry@schmoyer.net. If you have any questions or prayer requests please feel free to write to me.

1. What is the significance of Jesus' baptism? What change took place?
2. List three lessons you have learned about spiritual warfare from Jesus' temptation.
3. How did Jesus have victory over Satan when tempted?
4. In what ways are you most tempted?
5. What have you learned from Jesus' example about how to resist temptation?
6. What does the Greek word 'demonizing' mean?
7. How would you answer someone who asked if a believer could be demonized? What proof would you use to show them that Christians can be demonized?
8. Should you talk to demons? Why or why not?
9. How did Jesus cast out demons? What does this show us about how we should have victory over them?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

2. TEST OF TRUE DISCIPLESHIP (Matthew 7:21-23)

Shortly after Jesus delivered the man in the synagogue from demons (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37) He warned the disciples that even being able to drive out demons in Jesus' name wasn't something to use as assurance of salvation. "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and in your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?' Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!'" (Matthew 7:21-23) Even claiming supernatural works by His name doesn't prove salvation, only faith in Jesus brings salvation and assurance of eternal life with God.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Don't put emphasis on your skill in spiritual warfare, as if that makes you a more mature believer or someone special in God's sight. Our relationship with God is all about who we are, not what we do. It is all His doing anyway, never ours. Focusing on it can only lead to pride. No matter how greatly God uses you, you are still just the instrument, the channel for His power. It is never us. It is only and always Him!

We'd all love to have the success Jesus had at spiritual warfare. Certainly His disciples wanted that as well. But Jesus had to warn them to keep this skill in perspective.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Spiritual warfare is a means to an end, not an end in itself. It is another tool that God gives us to live for Him and serve Him. When building something various tools are needed: hammer, saw, screw driver, etc. No piece of furniture can be built with only one tool. For the job required, each tool has a specific purpose, but no tool is greater than all the others. Spiritual warfare is a tool God gives us to have victory over Satan and his demons, but we have other tools that are also needed to live the Christian life: prayer, teaching, worship, fellowship, meditation, fasting, listening to God, knowing God's will, being controlled by the Spirit, walking by the Spirit and others. All are needed. Each has its specific purpose. No one does it all. Don't get spiritual warfare out of perspective. Don't see it as some superior way to live and serve. It is great for its purpose, but we need a balanced Christian life. It's a tool we must master and keep close, but in doing so we must not neglect the other tools God gives us.

3. FILLING THE HOUSE (Matthew 12:43-45)

At about this same time Jesus spoke other words about spiritual warfare: "When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, 'I will return to the house I left.' When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first. That is how it will be with this wicked generation" (Matthew 12:43-45).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Where do demons go when cast out of a person? Where should we command them to go? Here Jesus says they go to "arid places" (Matthew 12:43-45; Job 30:3-8). Other times they are said to be "sent away" (Mark 5:12-13), go to "destruction" (Mark 1:24), or go to "torment" (Matthew 8:29). Eventually they will all be sent to the lake of fire for all eternity (Revelation 20:10 – 21:8). Whatever term you use, God will decree where they are to go. You can command them to "go to the place where Jesus sends you." It is important to forbid them to return, forbid them to go into any other family members, and forbid any new demons to come to take their place. Don't just send them out, leaving them free to continue their evil work wherever they choose. Command where they are to go, at least commanding them to go where Jesus would send them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus' words also show the extreme importance of being filled with God's Spirit when the demons are sent away. If one does not turn to God's Word and live a life of holiness to God, the door that was closed will be immediately open again and more and worse demons will enter to work against the person. When praying to have demons removed also pray for God's Spirit to fill the person and remove all the work of the enemy. Pray for them to be filled with the fruit of the Spirit, mentioning each fruit one by one (Galatians 5:22-25). Ask God to remove all the work and effects of the demons in the person's life and to heal them from it. Ask God to send angels and/or His Spirit through their life to remove every work of the demons and anything any demon might try to leave behind to continue their work. Ask God to fill each and every part of the person with His light and glory, His Spirit and presence. Then dedicate the person to God as a new creation in Him (2 Corinthians 5:17).

The purpose of deliverance from demonizing is so a person can grow spiritually. Often that comes slowly and by stages because all growth comes that way. It is often more of a process than a one-time event. Each lesson we learn and step of progress we make must become part of us as we fill that part of our lives with His presence and bring it under His control. Freedom from demonizing is not a one-time event where God does everything for us, but a series of steps whereby we grow in faith and become more like Jesus. It is very important to stay close to Jesus and grow spiritually when seeking to be delivered from demonizing. This includes prompt repentance from any and all sin (Ephesians 4:26-27; Genesis 4:7), doing all we do out of a motive of love (1 Corinthians 13:5), living a life of disciplined thoughts and actions (Philippians 4:8), and implementing God's principles into daily family life (Ephesians 5:22 – 6:4).

4. SNATCHING TRUTH AWAY (Mark 4:3-34; Matthew 13:1-15; Luke 8:4-13)

Jesus is now about half way through His three year ministry. He has been preaching and doing miracles to proclaim Himself the Messiah, but only a small group has accepted His claims and followed Him. The majority, including the religious rulers, have rejected His offer because their pride kept them from admitting their need of Him. At this point a change takes place in His ministry. His focus shifts from trying to reach the masses, to training those who will follow Him. Teaching replaces miracles, and parables become Jesus' main way of teaching truth to His followers while hiding it from those who would mock and reject (Matthew 13:10-17).

His first extended use of parables were those about the growth of the kingdom, starting with the parable of the sower and the seed. In this series Jesus taught His disciples that the rejection He was experiencing was to be expected. His Kingdom was starting small, but would eventually grow and expand. His followers weren't to be alarmed by the lack of response.

When interpreting the parable of the sower and the seed to His followers, Jesus gives insight into the workings of Satan. "Satan comes and takes away the word that was sown" (Mark 4:15). Evidently to some extent Satan and demons can influence our thought processes.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The majority of demonizing consists of demons putting thoughts into a person's mind or snatching thoughts out of a person's mind. While they don't have access to our minds and thoughts to the same extent that God does, the Bible makes it clear there is some access (Mark 4:15). David's thought to take a census was demonic (I Chronicles 21:1ff; II Samuel 24:1ff). So was Ananias & Saphira's greed (Acts 5:3) and Saul's jealousy/anger (I Samuel 16:14-23). When talking about spiritual warfare Paul says we are to "bring every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ." (II Corinthians 10:4-5). Not only can demons put wrong thoughts into our minds, they can snatch right thoughts out (Mark 4:15) so we forget them. Pray specifically for those you are ministering to, claiming their minds and thoughts for God. Watch your own mind, making sure God is in control of every thought (Romans 12:1-2).

5. GADARENES DEMONIAK (Mark 5:1-20; Matthew 8:28-34; Luke 8:26-37)

About six months after Jesus' first recorded deliverance, casting demons out of the man in the synagogue (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37), one of His major confrontations with demons occurred. He was about half way through His three year public ministry. Unlike most of the other occasions, when the demonized person came to Jesus, this time He went to them.

Jesus left the crowds He was ministering to in order to take a boat across the Sea of Galilee. He wanted to go help a man who couldn't come to Him. Satan didn't want Him to go free that man so he sent a storm to sink the boat. Jesus spoke to the storm and got safely to the other side.

When Jesus got there He was met by a man with an evil spirit, actually many demons afflicted this man. Matthew 8:28 says there were two demonized men present, but Mark and Luke only refer to the one who was the spokesman. By looking at the lives these men were living we can see some of the symptoms of demonizing.

Symptoms of Demonizing

Symptom 1: **Darkness and death.** These men lived in a graveyard, probably in caves in the limestone cliffs by the lake. Dead bodies were placed in these caves to decay, so it was a very unnatural way to live (Mark 5:3, 5; Luke 8:29). God is light and life, but Satan and his demons are all about death and darkness. They are attracted to death and darkness, and bring death and darkness wherever they go.

Symptom 2: **Anger and violence.** Demons fuel violence and anger, and that characterized these men (Mark 5:3-4; Luke 8:29; Matthew 8:28). They attacked whomever came nearby. Demons love pain and destruction, and they enjoy using humans to bring suffering and misery to others. This can be physical, mental or emotional abuse of any form.

Symptom 3: **Out of control.** These men didn't have control of their actions (Mark 5:5). They would cry out and continually did evil. Demonizing takes control away from a person and motivates them to do what the demons want them to do.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Demons can never take 100% control of a person's free will, but over time they can build so much influence over a person that the person seems to be unable to resist. No matter what, no matter how strongly a person is controlled by demons, he or she still has a free will to reach out to Jesus. Demons can never take away their free will. That is the key to deliverance, especially for those who are greatly controlled. The demonized person MUST want to be free. If they don't, no one can force deliverance on them against their will. Pray not that they would be delivered, for God won't force their free will, but pray they would see the facts clearly and make a decision for God, however small it may seem. Deliverance is not done by the one ministering to the demonized, but by Jesus responding to the free will of the demonized person. Jesus chooses to use us as His vessel to bring this about, but it all depends on the will of the demonized.

Symptom 4: **Pain and self-destruction.** Another characteristic of demonic activity which is also unnatural is inflicting pain on themselves by cutting themselves (Mark 5:5). The only other time this is seen in the Bible is when the prophets of Baal slashed themselves so they bled in order to have Baal hear their cries and send fire to consume their altar (I Kings 18:28). Both cases are clearly demonic.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Demons are behind self-destructive desires. It is unnatural for a person to want to harm themselves. Everything normal in us pushes for self-protection. When a person inflicts pain on themselves by cutting, tattoos (Leviticus 19:28) or taking their life we

can be sure something has caused them to go against what is normal and natural, and usually that is demonic influence (Mark 9:20).

Suicidal thoughts should always be assumed to be motivated by demons (Matthew 17:14-19; Luke 9:37-45; Mark 9:14-29). This is also the case with Judas who was indwelt by Satan (Luke 22:3; John 13:27) and then committed suicide (Acts 1:18-19). If you or someone you know has these thoughts, pray against them. The person with the thoughts must confess them and take back any ground they have given to demons. These kinds of thoughts are like 'prayers.' All kinds and types of thoughts are like prayers. The difference in suicidal thoughts is that one dwells deeply in them and that gives them more power. Thoughts of hate, death, fear, lust, etc., also have power. The greater the thought given it the greater the power. The power is in the thought which empowers demons to help bring this about in a person's life. It is always with the person's free will choice never forced on them against their free will.

Symptom 5: **Ungodly sensuality and sexual perversion.** These men did not wear clothes (Luke 8:27). Their natural inhibitions and modesty were affected by the demons influencing them. Demons are often behind the sexual sins and perversion so common today.

Symptom 6: **Thoughts into their mind.** These sinful actions start with sinful thoughts. Demons are able to put a thought into a person's mind, then keep bringing it back again and again. It's not always a thought that the person wants, and certainly isn't a thought God would give them. Therefore the only other source must be demonic. The thoughts lead to actions that bring bondage and destruction. They could be thoughts of anger, fear, violence, lust or greed. The thoughts could be sexual, self-destructive, vengeful or blasphemous. They can even be thoughts that cause a person to feel unforgiven or unloved by God, that a person has lost their salvation, or are too evil to ever be in heaven. Thoughts of fear, insecurity, unworthiness, failure, being alone, rejection and revenge are some of the many that demons strive to instill in a person's mind.

LESSON FOR TODAY: for more information about how demons influence our thoughts today see above: 4. SNATCHING TRUTH AWAY (Mark 4:3-34; Matthew 13:1-15; Luke 8:4-13)

LESSON FOR TODAY: Not all evil thoughts are from demons, so how can we tell if our thoughts are from a demon or from our sin nature? When the source is our sin nature we can have victory by confessing the sin and growing spiritually. It may take time, but there will be progress being made as we become more like Jesus. If the source is demonic then trying harder will have no lasting effect. These men in the graveyard were unable to change their own behavior because they had allowed the demons to have a powerful hold over them. They had given up control which only Jesus' power could get back for them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: It is also natural to wonder how these men ever got to such a state. Why are some people so greatly demonized and others seemingly unaffected? The Bible doesn't tell us what allowed this in these men but does give us information as to the most common causes of demonizing. While any sin can open the door to allow demons in, there are some sins that are particularly effective in allowing this. Some of the more common openings to demonizing include:

Opening 1: Sins that allow another power to control us. If we turn to another power other than God, if we open our lives to influences that aren't from God, if we indulge in sins that allow us to be vulnerable to spiritual influences from demons, then we are opening the door for demons to enter and impact us. Idolatry, for example, opens the worshipper to demonizing because they allow the demon behind the idol to have access to themselves (1 Corinthians 10:20). Drug or alcohol abuse can do the same thing. Involvement in false religions also opens a door. Sexual sin is also a way demons enter a person's life (1 Corinthians 6:15-16). Pride,

anger and fear also make us vulnerable, for they become a prayer for these things to grow in our lives, and only Satan's forces would answer such a prayer.

Opening 2: Sin in our family line. The sin that opened the door for demons to enter doesn't have to have been committed by us. It could have been committed by an ancestor of ours. When a demon has access to a person, he also claims right to all that person has, including their children. The Bible says God "punishes the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation" (Exodus 20:4-5; Deuteronomy 5:8-9; Exodus 34:6-7). The Bible says that children are affected by their parents sins (Ezekiel 18:2) and this is one of the ways. Children are not accountable for them, but are impacted by their consequences. The same is true of positive, godly influences from our parents which also are passed on. This is often called "generational openings" or "ancestral openings" and is one of the most common reasons people are demonized. (For more information see under Old Testament, Moses (Exodus – Deuteronomy.)

Opening 3: Where we live. Some event may have happened on the land or in the home or room where you live. It could be a violent act, an occult activity, a curse, a dedicating of the property to the powers of darkness or similar acts. Sometimes when we go into a certain neighborhood or home there is a 'sense' of evil, a discomfort in our spirit. In a store that sells New Age materials you may 'feel' different in your spirit, a discomfort. This is the explanation for supernatural apparitions that happen in 'haunted' homes – demonic activity may be present. Some countries and even continents are in extra deep darkness and bondage. Often this can be sensed by mature, sensitive believers. The message we get is from God's Holy Spirit Who is warning us against the evil around us. Pray against it. Rebuke it. Leave unless you have a reason God wants you there.

If it is your home or church property then cleanse it. Pray, taking back any access the enemy may claim to the property and asserting your right as a child of God to claim and use it. Put any other claims under the blood of Jesus and dedicate it to Him for His honor and glory. A sign, picture or cross on the wall can be a good visual reminder to all of the ownership of the property by the Lord Jesus Christ.

If God wants you to do so, you can anoint the house and property while praying. Walk around your' boundaries praying out loud, claiming your property for God and forbidding any demons to have any access to it. Dedicate it to God and invite His presence throughout all of it. Take back any access any demons may claim to the property and put the access under the blood of Jesus. Break it in Jesus' name. Ask God to put an angelic hedge of protection around it. Do the same in all the rooms of the house, especially the basement (if you have one). Anoint each room with oil by dipping your finger in oil. Any kind will do, it is not the oil but the symbolism of God's Spirit being present that matters. With your finger then draw a cross on the door, walls, whatever seems appropriate. Pray as you would when you're walking around the property.

There is no power in the ritual or symbol, but in your heart attitude as you make a statement about whose side you are on. You are showing them you are ready to battle in God's strength. The cross announces to the spirit world whose side you are standing on and that you will battle rather than give in. The cross shows you are challenging their claim to that area.

If there is one particular part of the house that seems worse put a night light there so there is always light in to the room. You could do that to all the rooms. Demons turn from light because it shows truth and reality, which they don't want to see. They live in the realm of lies and deceptions. Demons hate light, and they hate hearing Jesus praised, so you can play praise music in various places 24 hours a day. It can be real soft – they will hear it! It's a

constant reminder or *Who is your Lord and Savior*. It reminds them of the truth which counters their lies. Playing recordings of the Bible being read is even more powerful.

Opening 4: Curses. It may be someone has put a curse on you or your family by asking that something bad happen to you. That is really a prayer that Satan loves to answer! That desire empowers demons to try to carry out the person's desire. Parents can curse their children by saying they wish they hadn't had them, they hate them, don't want them, they are no good and will never amount to anything, and so forth. Finally, we can curse ourselves (Proverbs 6:2) by saying we hope we die, that we aren't good enough, that we'll never be happy, we'll fail in what we try or any of many such things about ourselves (Proverbs 6:2).

The area of curses is a less common but still a strong opening to demonic access. To curse someone is to ask for evil to happen to them. Those requests (really prayers) are heard by Satan and his forces and 'answered' when possible. Cursing thoughts are like prayers. The more a person thinks of them and focus on them, the more power will go to the curse, or the blessing, whichever the case. This includes everything from occult and witchcraft curses to one individual 'wishing' harm on another. Balaam was paid to curse Israel, but God wouldn't allow it (Deuteronomy 23:4; Numbers 22 - 24). Curses can also be passed on from generation to generation. The Bible says that speaking evil of someone is the same as cursing them (Romans 12:14). Curses can be thinking or saying things like: "I hope you die..." "Since he/she won't love me I wish they'd" "You're no good, you'll never amount to anything..." "I hope she gets some of her own medicine..." "I hope your children" You can even curse yourself by what you say (Proverbs 6:2). Our words are powerful and important. They aren't something to be taken lightly. Using profanity ("curse" words) also falls into this category. When someone "damns" someone to "hell" that is an awful, awful thing to say! Demons love to hear it. They use the power of the hate in the speaker and will latch onto any authority or justification to do their evil!

It's not the verbal sounds that make the difference but our thoughts and feelings inside as we express them verbally. Rote chanting of words does nothing, but heartfelt desires communicated to God mean a lot. God reads our mind and thoughts even when we pray silently, but demons do not have access to our thoughts so praying or expressing ourselves out loud makes them aware of how we feel and where we stand. If it is inappropriate to pray out loud then do so in thoughts and let God take care of the rest, but when it is possible to express yourself out loud it is best to do so. It's important to realize that our thoughts are breathing and living and so are our feelings and, therefore, so is prayer.

The Bible says we can curse others (Ps 109:17). Demons use this as an excuse to work against the person, as a 'prayer' to gain access. Old Testament men (Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, etc. Gen 27:23, 38) would bless or curse their children (Genesis 48:20). Sometimes they even put a curse on them, as Abraham did with Ishmael and when Isaac cursed Esau. The Levites were used to pronounce blessings (Deuteronomy 10:8; 21:5). When Naomi came back to Israel she said she was to be called 'mara' because things had turned 'bitter' for her. A father is to bless his children by his words and send them into life with his and God's blessing. What you have done is the opposite.

If you feel this may have happened to you remember to "Bless them that curse you" (Matthew 5:44). Treat the person with love and kindness, for when you return good for evil the "undeserved curse does not come to rest" (Proverbs 6:2). Break that curse against you in Jesus' name, claiming Galatians 3:10,13 which says "Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: 'Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree.'" Ask God to turn the curse to a blessing (Deuteronomy 23:5).

Good is stronger than bad, so when you speak good into a situation where previously bad was spoken then the good is stronger and purer and it stops the curse. You can throw it back at the person who threw it at you, but turn it into a blessing – bless those who curse you (Luke 6:28). Love the person who hates you and God will use that stronger love to overcome the hate (Luke 6:27).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Curses can and must be broken in Jesus' name for the truth is that they can't prosper against God's people (Isaiah 54:17). 1) Break any and all of them in Jesus' name (Galatians 3:13) and 2) ask God to surround you and protect you with His presence and angels instead (Job 1:5).

Let's go back to our account of Jesus with the demonized men in the Gadarenes. When Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee and landed they immediately came to Him and knelt before Him (Mark 5:1-8). The demons recognized He was God. Perhaps the men did as well, or somehow sensed something different about Him. Despite the terrible control the demons had, they still have free will to choose to come to Jesus or not.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The demons could not prevent these men from coming to Jesus. No matter how many demons or how strong the influence, God always makes sure the person still can make a free will choice to move away from the demons and towards God should they choose to do so. No one is helpless, locked in – not unless they choose for it to be that way. (see Symptom 3. Out of Control. above for more information about a demonized person's free will).

This is the only time Jesus ever talked to a demon. He asked him his name, which was 'Legion' meaning about 5,000 or 6,000 soldiers, signifying the number of demons influencing this man. Jesus wanted everyone to see how great His power was by how many demons He could defeat at one time. The only other thing they said was a request to go into the pigs. Jesus had commanded them to leave and, while they stalled as long as they could, they knew they couldn't resist His command.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus had to command the demons to come out over and over (Mark 5:8, continual present tense in the Greek, "kept saying over and over").. They were very resistant to leaving, even when Jesus commanded them. This is the only time that happened for every other time they left immediately (Matthew 8:16). Some demons have such a strong hold on their host that it takes persistent warfare to remove them (Mark 9:29).

As stated, the demons made an unusual request – to indwell the pigs which were nearby since they could no longer indwell the men. Jesus allowed this, again probably to show those watching the power and destruction of the demons He had so easily defeated.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Demons want to indwell something, if they lose their host they will immediately seek another. Often they share several hosts at one time, moving from one person to another. That's why demonic oppression often seems to go in cycles.

If demons can't indwell people they will indwell animals. Perhaps this is why sometimes whales, the animals with the greatest intelligence and the closest to humans in many ways, beach themselves. I've often wondered if what happened to these pigs doesn't still happen sometimes today. That could be an explanation of why these great sea creatures some times beach and kill themselves. This shows that demons seek to bring death and destruction, and self-destructive tendencies come from demonic influence. Why else would pigs suddenly commit suicide?

LESSON FOR TODAY: The demons didn't want to be sent "out of the area" (Mark 5:10). This was the territory they were assigned to and they didn't want to leave it. It was their 'home'

area. Demons are assigned to different geographical locations, families, groups, world movements, religious or secular groups, etc. They stay with them for generations and want to continue working in those areas. They become very good at what they do.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Neither did they want to be sent “into the abyss” (Luke 8:31). The Greek word, ‘tartarus,’ is used as a place of confinement for demons who are awaiting their expulsion into the lake of fire (Revelation 20:1-3). They didn’t want to go there because they would then be inactive and not able to cause harm to God’s kingdom.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The demons knew they would one day be tormented, but it was not time for that yet (Matthew 8:29). They fear the coming judgment. We can have courage and confidence that they fear us when we are ministering in Jesus’ power.

The end of the story has a happy ending: “When they came to Jesus they saw the man who had been demonized by the legion of demons, sitting there, dressed and in his right mind” (Mark 5:15). Today we talk about chemical imbalances, emotional disorders and bipolar tendencies. We prescribe various kinds of medicines. When Jesus faced people with these symptoms, He cast out the demons and immediately they were total freed and completely normal and mentally healthy

LESSON FOR TODAY: When Jesus cast demons out of someone or forgave them He, in some manner or way, told them to not sin any more (John 8:11). It was sin that led to the bondage and demonizing in the first place. The sin must be confessed (admitted to as sin, I John 1:9) in order for the demons to no longer be able to claim it and stay.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Here is a prayer you can use if you sense any demonic activity against yourself. You can change the words and use them for others. It is only an example. There is no one right way to pray or say things. Adapt and use this however you would like:

“Dear Jesus, I thank you for the salvation you give me in Jesus. I know You are greater than Satan and His demons. I know You have power and authority over them. I know You have given us that power & authority in Jesus’ name. In Jesus name I forbid any demons to work against me or my family or my church. In Jesus name I close the door to any reason they think they can work against me. If I have committed any sin that they use to work against me I put it under the blood of Jesus. In Jesus’ name I forbid them to work and command them to be gone. In Jesus’ name I break any claim that comes down through my family line. I am a new creation in God’s family. I forbid any claim against me through my name or family line. In Jesus’ name I dedicate the land where my home and church are to God. In Jesus’ name I break any claim demons may make through those places. I ask for Your presence only to fill and use those places. In Jesus’ name I break any curses any one has made against me, my family or my church. Jesus has taken all my curse on the cross. His power has broken any power of the enemy against me. So in Jesus’ name I forbid any demons to work against me or my family or my church. I commit myself and my family and my church to God only. Fill me with Your Holy Spirit. Surround me with Your angels. Use me for Your glory. In Jesus’ name I pray. Amen”

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. What happens if someone is delivered of demonic attacks but doesn't live an obedient life and grow spiritually?
2. How can this be prevented?
3. To what extent do demons have access to our thoughts? Can they put ideas in our minds? What can we do to prevent this?
4. List 4 symptoms of demonizing which are seen in the men in Gadarenes?
5. Name some of the most common causes for demonizing, that which opens the door to demons?
6. Why did Jesus ask the demon what His name was?
7. Should we communicate with demons? Why or why not?
8. What are some of the main lessons you have learned from the story of the demonized men in the graveyard?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

6. POWER & AUTHORITY GIVEN (Luke 9:1; 10:1, 17-19)

There must have been much discussion between Jesus and His disciples as they walked the dusty roads, sat and ate in the evenings, and ministered to others who were demonized. Jesus took every opportunity to teach the disciples what they would need to know to continue the battle when He was gone. Only a very small part of all that happened is recorded in the Gospels for us. As John so aptly states, "If everything Jesus did was written down there wouldn't be enough room in the whole world for all the books!" (John 21:25)

Because of this, what is recorded about spiritual warfare is all the more important. There must be good reasons for choosing that which is recorded for us. It must be information we need. God Himself kept it accurate for us (2 Timothy 3:16). That being said, Jesus' comments about the power and authority believers have over Satan and demons are all the more significant. These comments were recorded because they are something we must know.

"When Jesus had called the Twelve together, He gave them power and authority to drive out all demons and to cure diseases" (Luke 9:1). "After this the Lord appointed seventy-two others and sent them two by two ahead of Him to every town and place where He was about to go. ... The seventy-two returned with joy and said, 'Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name.' He replied, 'I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you'" (Luke 10:1,17-19).

"I HAVE given you" Jesus says indicating it happened in the past, it is already done. It's not something for them to wait for in the future. The Greek tense indicates the action is completed and the results continue on. Jesus had given to them, and therefore to us as well, two things: "power" and "authority."

Authority, 'exousia' in the Greek, is used 108 times in the New Testament and refers to the right to use power. He gave the disciples the authority to enforce His spiritual commands and laws. Policemen have authority, a badge, which allows them to enforce the laws of the government. It's not their own authority but that which comes from their government. It is delegated authority, like a husband has over a wife and a parent over a child. Everything Jesus did was because God had given Him authority to do it (John 5:19). He had laid aside His own divine authority (Philippians 2:6-8) to live life as any other human being. All He did was by God's own authority given to Him, as it is to us as well.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus has given us that same authority to use today (John 14:12; Matthew 28:18-20). Satan deceives us into thinking we are powerless victims but that is a lie. As God's children we have access to the same resources Jesus did when He lived on earth. God has given us His full blessing because we are His children. He planned salvation and chose us to receive it before creating the world (Ephesians 1:4; Jeremiah 1:5). He created us in His own likeness (Genesis 1:26). He paid for our sins before we were ever born (Romans 5:8). He formed and cared for us while we were still in our mother's womb (Psalm 139:13-15). He chose us and He calls us His friends (John 15:15-16). We are born into His family, He is our Father (Romans 8:15; Galatians 4:6) and we are His children (John 1:12; 1 John 3:2). He rescued us from slavery (Galatians 4:4-7) and put His Holy Spirit inside us (John 14:17). He gives us an equal inheritance with His Son, Jesus (Romans 8:14-17). When He looks at us He sees us as holy because of what Jesus did for us (Romans 1:7; 2 Corinthians 5:17). We can come into His presence in prayer any time we want, we have eternal life guaranteed, we are free from any condemnation and He has delivered us from the power of Satan. All these things and more He gives us.

Not only did Jesus give His disciples authority, He also gave them **power**. A policeman needs authority, a badge, but sometimes he needs power to enforce that authority – a club or gun. ‘Power’ is used 118 times in the New Testament and refers to power, might, strength and force. Our word ‘dynamite’ comes from it. God has also given us His power as well as His authority (Acts 1:8; Luke 10:17).

LESSON FOR TODAY: We also have this power available to us (Acts 1:8; John 14:12). It is His power that transforms us into a new creation (2 Corinthians 5:17) as He makes us a new man (Ephesians 4:24; Colossians 3:10). His power delivers us from temptations and trials when we rely on Him (1 Corinthians 10:13; 2 Corinthians 2:14). He has power to put His divine nature in us (2 Peter 1:4), give us abundant life now & eternal life in heaven (John 3:16; 10:10).

Jesus gave His followers power and authority to drive out ALL demons (Luke 9:1) – none are greater than His power. He did not enable His followers to cure all diseases, though. Some He will remove in response to our prayers, but only with demonizing are we assured that ALL must obey and yield. When Jesus returns all disease will be gone, but we don’t have authority to remove all of it now (for more information on healing see under 13. LAYING ON OF HANDS, Luke 13:10-17).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Always remember the power and authority you have in Jesus. You can pray and preach in His name and power. Use it to encourage people when they need it, give counsel with the wisdom of God’s Spirit, rebuke demons in Jesus’ name, ask God to heal if it is His will, claim protection for your family and yourself, teach His word with authority, witness to others with power, forgive those who hurt you and show unconditional love to all. We don’t have to live in defeat nor do we ever have to fear Satan or his forces. We have everything we need for victory in Jesus, but we must use the power and authority He gives us because on our own we can do nothing (John 15:5).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Another important lesson from this is that Jesus sent the disciples out to minister (Luke 10:1). The way we learn is by doing, not by waiting, by letting someone else do it, or by trying to learn everything there is to know. We will never know it all, never feel competent, never be on top of everything – we must keep depending on God which is how He wants it (2 Corinthians 12:9). All you need to know to begin your own spiritual warfare is that Jesus is greater than Satan (1 John 4:4). That is enough to start. God will be with you, honor your attempts and help you learn. God knows when we start this work we will not be experts but will learn as we go. Read worthwhile books, talk with others who do this in a Biblical way and do whatever it takes to learn more about spiritual warfare. Fight wisely, or the demons will not leave, or if they do they will come back even stronger (Matthew 12:44-45; Luke 11:25-26). Do your best with God’s strength and keep growing in wisdom and skill.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Not only did Jesus send them out, but He sent them out by twos. As much as possible have someone with you to pray for you, to help you and encourage you, for extra wisdom, and so you can train them (or learn from them) so that they can then go on their own and train someone else. Especially when getting started, try to have someone else with you when you confront the demons realm.

Jesus’ power over demons was from God, but those who didn’t want to recognize this needed to find a different way to explain His power because clearly it was super human. The only other power source in the universe besides God is Satan, and so they were forced to say that what Jesus did was by demonic powers (John 7:20; 8:48-52; 10:20-25). They said Jesus was an imposter, a deceiver (Matthew 27:63; John 7:12, 47). When Herod heard about Jesus’ miracles he thought it was some kind of supernatural ‘magic’, somehow John came back to life (Matthew 6:14-16).

7. DEMONIZING OF CHILDREN (Matthew 15:21-28; Mark 7:24-30)

A few months after Jesus sent the disciples out to do spiritual warfare there was an encounter with a demonized girl that is recorded by both Matthew and Mark. A Gentile woman asked Jesus to drive the demon out of her daughter but He resisted, saying He came to bring deliverance for the Jews. Her faith was strong enough to accept that but to also know He was able to help her without taking away from the Jews. Jesus honored her faith by casting out the demon even though the girl was back at home in bed far from Jesus (Matthew 15:21-28; Mark 7:24-30).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Children can be demonized. The Greek word for 'daughter' here refers to a very young daughter. When one person opens the door to demons those same demons claim all the person has, including their children. They claim the blood line and/or name as access.

Often adopted children, who have experienced rejection, are demonized by demons who use the open door of rejection to move into the child's life. Usually there is a history of alcohol, drugs and/or sexual sin in one or both of the birth parents. This makes adopted children all the more vulnerable to demonizing.

If a child is an unwanted pregnancy, even if the parent keeps and raises the child, this can open the door for demons to enter. If someone curses a child that prayer to Satan is something his demons will draw power from and do what they can to bring that about in the child's life.

Sometimes, too, young children are attacked as a way of getting back at a parent or family who is serving God and living for Him.

LESSON FOR TODAY: This child was delivered without confessing or repenting of any sin, without even being in Jesus' presence. Often this is the case with children. Parents, who are their authority figure, can represent them and pray for deliverance for their children. Many times they are quite young or don't understand what is happening, so being present would be more of a distraction than a help. It is usually the parent's sin (through family line) that has to be dealt with by confession and taking back access.

8. DELIVERANCE FAILURE (Matthew 17:14-19; Luke 9:37-45; Mark 9:14-29)

Shortly after the event with the Gentile girl there was a situation with a Jewish boy that is also recorded (Matthew 17:14-19; Luke 9:37-45; Mark 9:14-29). A young boy was demonized to the extent he would have a seizure, foam at the mouth, gnash his teeth and then become rigid. This has been happening since childhood. The demons also caused him to try to kill himself by throwing himself into fire or water. Evidently the boy was deaf and mute as well – all work of the demons influencing him. We saw previously how demons bring death and destruction, and this is another example of that (see Mark 5:5; 1 Kings 18:28). Jesus was disappointed that the Jews didn't have enough faith in God to have victory over these demons. Even his own disciples were unable to drive them out. Jesus said it would have been possible for them to have driven the demons out if they believed. Jesus commanded the demons to leave and never return and they obeyed! They had no choice but to obey Him. When the disciples asked why they weren't able to drive the demons out Jesus said "this kind can come out only by prayer" (Mark 9:29).

LESSON FOR TODAY: It takes faith in God, that He is greater and able to deliver, to have successful prayer for deliverance. Satan and his demons use fear as a big weapon to undermine our faith. If we don't firmly believe that God is greater than they and totally able to defeat them we will never see victory through our prayers. Only prayer brings deliverance, no other rituals, public ceremonies, emotional activities or anything else – only prayer in faith. That is because prayer taps into God's power and that is what brings victory. It's not the prayer that does it, but the God to Whom we pray!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Learn from your failures, for you will have them. The disciples had been living and traveling with Jesus all day every day for over a year and had been trained by Him to do this. They had great success in spiritual warfare in the past (Luke 10:1, 17-18) but not now. Jesus uses this to teach them. Don't fear failure – try your best and learn from any mistakes you may make. Trying and failing is not nearly as bad as not trying at all.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Always forbid the demons to return when you cast them out (Mark 9:25). It's good to forbid any others to replace the ones driven out. Also forbid them to enter anyone else but to go where Jesus sends them. All this must be done in Jesus' name and power. Ask God for wisdom and be sensitive as to how He leads.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus explained their failure to use their authority and power to command the demons to be gone by saying "This kind can come out only by prayer" (Mark 9:29). "This kind" clearly implies there are various kinds of demonic strongholds and some are easier to break than others. The demons who controlled this boy, causing him to be mute and deaf, have seizures and try to kill himself, were strongly entrenched and took 'prayer' to remove them. Jesus didn't elaborate, but evidently the disciples understood. Perhaps they were trying to have victory in their own strength instead of God's strength, trying to command the demons on their own instead of through God's power and authority.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Epilepsy, in fact any kind of seizures, cannot always be proven to be demonic, but that possibility should always be considered when praying for them. When Jesus confronted someone having seizures He always cast out demons and they were healed (Matthew 4:24; 17:15; Luke 9:38; 22:54; Mark 9:18). As we see in this account, demons who work in this way usually have a strong foothold and aren't easily removed, but with God's power and authority we can defeat them in Jesus' name.

LESSON FOR TODAY: What about when deliverance is slow or not at all? Remember sometimes God has a greater purpose than casting out every demon as soon as we pray. Sometimes there is delay. Even Jesus had times when He had to persevere for awhile (Luke 8:31 Greek). Usually deliverance is a process. It's like peeling the layers off an onion. As new sin is revealed and removed, more ground is taken back from Satan's forces. This gradual process allows the person to better fill the ground which has been reclaimed with God's Holy Spirit and gives him time to grow spiritually (Psalm 59:11; 119:50,67,71) before the next 'layer' is removed.

That's why the Jews under Joshua only conquered the Promised Land bit by bit instead of all at once. If they would have driven out all the Canaanites immediately then lions and other wild animals would have increased and done harm to the people. In addition, there is a learning process involved that can be used to help others (II Corinthians 1:3-4).

Other times complete deliverance never comes. Paul's thorn in the flesh is an example (II Corinthians 12:7). Paul testifies God then provides the grace needed to withstand. God wants us to learn to depend on Him (Psalm 119:59,92). Of course if the opening is allowed to continue then the demonizing will continue, too (Psalm 94:12-16; 81:11-14).

9. THOSE WHO DO IT DIFFERENTLY (Mark 9:38-40; Luke 9:49-50)

During this busy time of ministry the disciples happened upon someone driving out demons in Jesus' name but not doing it the way they did. Jesus said to not stop them because anyone who is not against them is for them (Mark 9:38-40; Luke 9:49-50).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Deliverance is done many different ways today. We are to seek God's wisdom and will in how we are to approach this ministry, patterning what we do after Jesus and the disciples as revealed in His Word. Yet when confronted with someone who doesn't share our practices we aren't to judge or withdraw fellowship from those whose methods differ from ours. We don't have to agree or support them, but neither are we to criticize or try to oppose them. Make sure they know Jesus as Savior for it is possible to be able to drive out demons in Jesus name without being a believer (Matthew 7:22).

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. What is the difference between 'power' and 'authority' from Jesus?
2. Why does Jesus give us both of them?
3. Give some examples of when you should use His power in your life?
4. Give some examples of when you should use His authority in your life?
5. What are some reasons young children can be demonized?
6. Why is deliverance often a slow, gradual process?
7. Why does it sometimes seem that deliverance fails?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

10. AUTHORITY TO BIND & LOOSE (Matthew 16:13-19; Mark 8:27-29; Luke 9:18-20)

As Jesus' time on earth wound down and opposition, both human and Satanic, kept getting stronger, Jesus continued to teach and prepare His disciples. During a time of informal discussion, Jesus asked His disciples who they thought He was (Matthew 16:13-19; Mark 8:27-29; Luke 9:18-20). Many and various opinions were circulating and bringing much confusion. Peter stepped to the front and affirmed that Jesus was the Christ, the Son of the living God! Jesus was greatly pleased and told them all that on this truth Jesus would build His church, which not even Satan himself would be able to overcome. He also said "whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven" (Matthew 16:19).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus promises He will build His church. No one else can do so, and nothing can stop it from happening. It is not our church for us to grow, it is His church for Him to grow. There will be opposition, even from the 'gates of Hades' (Satan and his evil forces) but nothing can defeat God and His people.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Binding and loosing is very similar to rebuking, just a bit more specific. Rebuking means to resist, oppose what an evil spirit is doing. Binding and loosing, which applied to demonizing, refers to stopping (by binding) evil spirits and freeing (loosing) those they have in bondage. This passage (Matthew 16:19) is quite difficult to understand in detail, but clearly some authority over evil is given to God's people.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus gave Peter, as he spoke the truth about Jesus as revealed to him by God, the keys to the kingdom so that whatever they bound on earth would be bound in heaven and whatever they loosed on earth would be loosed in heaven (Matthew 16:19). This is authority and power to minister in His name, as seen before (Luke 9:1; 10:1, 17-19). Jesus will be gone, and He is giving His disciples the right to represent Him, like a parent would give a grown child were the parent to be leaving for a long time. These keys are hard to understand, but they don't have to do with salvation. They are not keys TO the kingdom but keys OF the kingdom. Whatever is bound or loosed on earth is first bound or loosed in heaven. When we affirm that someone is forgiven when they confess their sin, or not forgiven when they do not humble themselves and confess their sins, we are applying God's truth as revealed in His Word. We can represent God and tell others when they have done what God accepts to receive salvation, and also when they don't.

11. SATAN ATTACKS THROUGH OTHERS (Matthew 16:21-23; Mark 8:31; Luke 9:22-27)

At that point in His earthly ministry Jesus repeatedly told His followers that He must go to Jerusalem, suffer, be crucified but come back to life on the third day (Matthew 16:21-23; Mark 8:31; Luke 9:22-27). Peter rebuked Him and said it would never happen! In response Jesus said, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men" (Matthew 16:21-23; Mark 8:31; Luke 9:22-27). Satan was subtly attacking Jesus through Peter, making a way for Him to avoid the cross. This was a repeat of the temptation in the wilderness after Jesus was baptized.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Some of Satan's attacks are overt, clear attempts to overpower us. But the more successful ones are subtle and often go unnoticed. Without being aware of it Peter is being used by Satan to tempt Jesus to avoid the cross. We don't know if Satan inserted

the thought into Peter's mind or just used what He said to tempted Jesus. Either way Jesus recognized Satan was behind it and using it. Satan will use those closest to us to mislead us if possible. He will use seemingly innocent comments by those closest to us to influence us in the direction he wants us to go. Perhaps this is why Satan allowed Job's wife to remain when he took everyone else in his family (Job 2:9). He used Eve, who was deceived, to influence Adam, who knew what he was doing was wrong (2 Corinthians 11:3; 1 Timothy 2:13-14).

LESSON FOR TODAY: In order for Satan to use Peter, Peter had to be open and available. There had to be negative thoughts of fear and/or pride in Peter which he fed and allowed to remain. Then Satan was able to work through Peter and use him to tempt Jesus. It is of the utmost importance to keep every thought and feeling captive to Jesus (Romans 12:1-2), to make sure they all line up with the Word of God.

12. JUDAS IS SATANIZED (John 6:70)

At about the same time, almost 3 years after being baptized by John, Jesus revealed that one of the twelve He chose was being used by Satan (John 6:70). Judas, in his pride and greed, will allow Satan to indwell him (Luke 22:3-4).

13. LAYING ON OF HANDS (Luke 13:10-17)

A few months afterwards, 3 full years after Jesus left the carpentry shop in Nazareth and was baptized by John, a final example of Jesus' power over Satan is recorded (Luke 13:10-17). Jesus was teaching in a synagogue on the Sabbath and a woman who had been crippled by a demon for 18 years was present. When Jesus saw her He called her to Him, put His hands on her, and immediately she was healed. The religious rulers objected to Jesus doing this on the Sabbath and Jesus rebuked them as hypocrites. Talking about the woman, Jesus referred to her being crippled as Satan binding her (Luke 13:16).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Sometimes God may lead you to lay hands on the person you are praying for, and on occasion Jesus Himself did this (Luke 4:29; 13:11-23; Matthew 8:15) as did the early church (I Corinthians 1:14f; 12:4; II Corinthians 1:21f; James 5:13-16). Touch can be a way of bestowing God's power and presence from you to the person you are praying for. It can help God's power break down the demons' defenses. It is a way of identifying with the person and connecting to them. Demons hate being touched, so laying hands on a person helps break their resistance as well. Be sensitive to God's leading in this area and do whatever it is He leads you to do.

When a person is demonized they experience sound, touch, etc. through the host person. Making the person look at you forces them to be aware of the truth you are speaking and not able to hide from it. Touching the person also gets their attention and focus so they are recipients of the truths you are speaking and they can't hide behind their lies and deceptions. Physically touching someone who is demonized often brings physical pain to the demon which gets their attention and reminds them of whose power is greater. So have the person sit or stand up straight and look at you when you speak so the demons can't hide and avoid your commands.

When a person allows someone to lay hands on them they in effect submit themselves to the authority of that person. If that person, the one in the position of authority, is open to something demonic then that can pass onto the person on whom hands are laid.

Make sure there is no sin in your life when you lay hands on someone, for when you stir up demonic opposition their first target will be you. Make sure you are walking closely with the Lord. Make sure that every sin is put under the blood of Jesus (1 John 1:9). To engage in this form of spiritual warfare is similar to taking the Lord's Supper with sin in your life for you are opening yourself up to demonic activity or God's discipline (or both).

By the same token, people who have had someone who wasn't a believer living in obedience to God lay hands on them have had a demon transferred to them by this. A casual touch will not do this, but submitting to the authority of someone else by bowing your head and letting them put hands on you opens you to them and their power, and therefore any demons that may have access to them. If this has happened this must be confessed and any demons who claim that as access to the person commanded to be gone.

LESSON FOR TODAY: There is often a strong relationship between spiritual deliverance and physical healing. Often physical problems are also gone when the demons leave. That is because it was the demons who were causing the physical problems. Examples of these in the Bible include: crippled limbs (Luke 13:11), Paul's thorn in the flesh (eye disease? - II Corinthians 12:7), muteness (sometimes dumbness, too - Matthew 9:32-33; 12:22; Mark 9:17-18,24-25), blindness (Matthew 12:22), seizures (Mark 1:26; 9:17-18,20,22,25; Matthew 17:15,18; Luke 9:39), deafness (Mark 9:17-18,20,25), sores (skin cancer?) (Job 2:7), boils and other painful afflictions (Psalm 78:49 - the plagues in Egypt were demon-caused), and physical torments of all kinds (Revelation 9:5,10). The Bible states that Satan can cause illness (Job 2:7-8), even death (Job 1:19).

Physical healing can be a result of deliverance. If any of the demons who were removed were causing physical problems those problems will be resolved when the demons are removed. Generational spirits can cause the same ailments from generation to generation. Physical problems are usually not God's main concern, rather He is more concerned for the spiritual condition of the heart. We often pray for the symptom (physical problem) to be removed while God wants us to seek Him and what He is trying to teach us through it. Paul's thorn in the flesh is a clear example. It wasn't God's will for that demon to be removed, but for Paul to be spiritually strengthened through the experience.

If a physical problem is present it is helpful to find out when it first started and what else was going on at that time. Instead of focusing on removing the physical symptom, look for the root cause, be it demonic, spiritual or whatever else it may be.

Jesus often cast out demons and cured illness at the same time. Jesus said he would do this (Luke 13:32). He did this at the start of His ministry (Matthew 4:23-24; 8:16; Mark 1:34; Luke 4:41), around Tyre and Sidon (Mark 3:10-12; Luke 6:18-19), and in the middle of His ministry (Luke 7:21). Many female followers of Jesus were cured of both (Luke 8:2).

Even more precise are the accounts of when Jesus both cast out demons and healed illness in a person at the same time (Mark 6:13; Acts 5:16). Philip did this in Samaria (Acts 8:7) and Paul did it in Ephesus (Acts 19:12).

It must be noted that not all illness is demonic in origin. Jesus healed physical ills that weren't demonic (Matthew 4:23-24; 8:16-17 fulfilled Isaiah 53:4; Mark 1:34; Acts 10:34; etc.). The Bible clearly talks about illnesses that are not demonic: severe pain (Matthew 4:24), seizures (Matthew 4:24), paralysis (Matthew 4:24; Acts 8:7), leprosy (Matthew 10:8), blindness (Luke 7:21), crippled limbs (Acts 8:7) and many other various diseases (Matthew 4:24). The fact that some physical ailments are on both lists (like seizures) shows that many ailments may have demonic or natural causes. They could be from one source or the other.

Thus it is obvious that some, but not all illness is demonic. There are no certain illness that are exclusively demonic, nor others that aren't. Any physical ill can be demonic, but it doesn't seem that any one physical illness is always demonic. In our day and age we err by seeing too few illnesses as being demonic. Thus we often miss the cure. How can we tell if an illness or physical problem is demonic or not? Some clues to look for are: medical doctors aren't able to bring relief or cure; there is a pattern of it running in the family; it seems strange or doesn't follow the regular pattern of symptoms (comes and goes for no particular reason, etc.); or you feel in your spirit that it should be prayed about and looked into as possibly being demonic.

Again, our pattern for bringing about this removal of physical ills by deliverance should follow Jesus' example. He rebuked a fever and it left immediately and strength instantly returned (Luke 4:39). On at least one occasion power came from within Jesus to heal (Luke 6:19). He often laid hands on a person to bring both deliverance and healing (Luke 4:40; 13:13; 4:29; Matthew 8:15; Luke 13:1-13).

As to us doing this today, again it must be done in God's strength and power. If He chooses to bring healing through deliverance that is His will. We must never demand it or make it dependent on having enough faith. No one today has a gift to heal anyone and everyone. It is right for us to pray for healing when doing deliverance and leave the results to God. It is also necessary to deal with any demons who may be causing the illness (physical or mental). Often demons affect our health in indirect ways, such as working in us so we eat or do things that are unhealthy for us in the long run and undermine our health. All of these, too, must be dealt with in Jesus' name (Matthew 10:1). Sometimes God may lead you to anoint with oil as a symbol of the Holy Spirit who does the healing (Mark 6:13). Do NOT put any faith in the oil or any ritual in using it, it is simply an audio-visual. For more on healing see under 13. LAYING ON OF HANDS (Luke 13:10-17).

In conclusion, be aware that illness is often demonic, especially when doctors are unable to bring a cure. Even diseases they can cure can still be demonic, especially if there are other signs of demonizing active in the person's life. Keep this in mind when praying and seeking wisdom. Don't accept any illness as "incurable." Always make sure it isn't demonic (by asking God for wisdom and commanding any demons involved in that ailment to be gone in Jesus' name). Remember, when dealing with emotional and spiritual ills in your warfare praying, don't let out physical ills! Never fear, demons can only cause illness with God's approval (Job 1:6-12).

One word of warning: since demons can cause illness, they can also bring counterfeit 'healings' by stopping the physical ills they themselves cause (Matthew 12:24; 24:24; 2 Thessalonians 2:9; Revelation 16:14). This explains miraculous healings that aren't done in accordance with God's will and Word.

LESSON FOR TODAY: IS IT GOD'S WILL FOR EVERYONE TO BE HEALED TODAY? There are those today who believe that Jesus not only paid for sin on the cross, but that He also paid for our sickness. They say that each is received by faith, if you have enough faith to receive it. Loss of faith, then, causes the loss of these benefits of faith. They claim some are especially gifted in healing and can heal those who come to them. They say God did miracles in the Bible and he is still a miracle-working God today.

What about this? Is this true? This is not just one peripheral issue, but stands very central in our salvation and Christian life. Is God's sovereignty or man's free will the final and ultimate deciding factor? It must be God's sovereignty. The motive for living for Jesus should not be fear of losing our salvation. The goal of living for Jesus should not be a problem free life.

Pain and suffering isn't to be faced by whipping up enough 'faith' so that God removes it (or living with the feelings of failure and guilt if it isn't removed and we believe that is our fault by not having enough faith). What about these claims of 'faith healers'? What does the Bible say?

Is the gift of healing for today? While it's true that Jesus and the Apostles healed, it was done as a sign to authenticate that they were from God (Matthew 12:39). This was God's way of having people listen to them instead of all the counterfeits around. When they were fully authenticated, there was no longer any reason for the sign. In AD 35 all were healed but by AD 60 some were not (Epaphroditus, Paul's thorn in the flesh). Then by AD 67 very few were being healed (Trophimus was left at Miletus sick, Timothy's stomach was unhealed, etc.). Jerusalem, the scene of many early miracles, had not one miracle done in it after Stephen was stoned. The people had the evidence but rejected it. James, the oldest book in the Bible, says that if someone is sick we are to pray for them (James 5:14).

Should we see miracles today like in bible times? Actually if you list all the miracles in the Bible you will find almost all of them fit three time periods. They aren't evenly spread out throughout history but cluster in the times of Moses/Joshua, Elijah/Elisha and Jesus/apostles. In each of these times a new mess had developed so God sent a new message through a new messenger whom He authenticated by miracles ("signs"). One more time of miracles is coming, called the Tribulation.

Is faith a prerequisite for healing? Jesus didn't make faith a requirement for healing. Many that He healed didn't have faith. The impotent man at the pool didn't even know who He was. The man with the withered hand and the man with dropsy were healed as a sign to religious leaders who were present, they didn't ask to be healed. The cripple that Peter and Paul healed outside the temple didn't exercise any faith. Of course the demoniacs who were delivered and those brought back from the dead didn't exercise faith. Then there are others who had strong faith but weren't healed: Stephen, Paul, Timothy, Job, David, Elisha, etc.

Is 'healing' today the same as in bible times? Today's 'healers' must meet the same characteristics of Jesus and the apostles to claim they are doing what was done then. Jesus and the apostles healed with a word or touch wherever and whenever. There was no special place or time, no chants or music, no gimmicks, nothing. Do today's faith healers walk down the hall in a hospital and empty every room? That's how Jesus and Peter did it. Also, Bible miracles were done instantly, not gradually or slowly. There was no healing to 'claim' or lose. Healing was then done totally, not partially, and it was never lost. Everyone was healed. There was no screening done. 100% of every one, no matter the need, was healed. Organic diseases were healed: limbs grew back instantly, strong enough to walk on, eyes were open, leprosy instantly gone and healthy flesh grown. Then, too, the dead were raised. Today's faith healing doesn't nearly meet these characteristics.

Does God not heal? Yes, a sovereign God can always heal. He is always able to heal, but He is not always willing. Healing isn't guaranteed. Healing isn't based on our having enough faith. Miracles by Jesus and the apostles were done as a sign to authenticate the One who could heal an unseen soul. God can and does heal, but He doesn't gift others to do it, nor does He say that is the recommended norm for His people.

What are we to do when sick? When we are sick its good to first make sure it isn't for sin or disobedience. If there is sin that God is using the sickness to point out, confess it and God will forgive and then use that illness for good (Romans 8:28). It's fine to pray, asking God to heal if that is His will. We are to submit to His will, not demand He do what we want. Ask Him to use the pain and suffering for His glory (that we and others can see His greatness through His provision and peace) and our growth(make us trust Him more and become more like Jesus).

Use the best available resources: diet, rest, exercise and medical help. Realize that all healing does ultimately come from God. Leave the results to His will, though.

Granted, this whole subject of faith and healing can be a confusing and guilt-producing area. Specific verses can be found to seemingly support most any view. However an overview of the Bible and it's teaching about these things definitely seems to substantiate the above view of healing. Always remember, our faith must be in Jesus. HE is the object of our faith, never a human person or group. Put faith in Jesus, not faith in your faith! HE is the one we are to look to and glorify. Always keep your eyes on Him. Trust and serve Him no matter what.

D. SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN JESUS' FINAL WEEK

1. JUDAS IS SATAN-INDWELT (Luke 22:3-4)

"Then Satan entered Judas, called Iscariot, one of the Twelve. And Judas went to the chief priests and the officers of the temple guard and discussed with them how he might betray Jesus" (Luke 22:3-4). Being demonized is terrible, being 'Satanized' is beyond comprehension. The only other person recorded to be indwelt by Satan is the antichrist (Revelation 13:2, 14-15). Satan wants to handle this with Jesus himself and not take a chance by letting even one of his top demons do the job. It is that important. Everything depends on keeping Jesus from dying and rising again. If they fail it will mean hell for them for all eternity!

2. TWO DECREES AGAINST SATAN (John 12:31; 16:7-11)

After entering Jerusalem on a donkey and proclaiming Himself Messiah, the Jews continued rejection of Jesus became final. Jesus, knowing crucifixion was certain, told His followers what would happen so they wouldn't be surprised or discouraged. "Now is the time for judgment on this world; now the prince of this world will be driven out" (John 12:31). The coming judgment on Satan and this evil world system is so certain Jesus speaks of it as if it is currently happening. "Driven out" is the same Greek word (edballoe) that is used of casting demons out of people.

A few days later, after the Last Supper and while walking to Gethsemane, Jesus affirmed the same truth. "The prince of this world now stands condemned" (John 16:11). Satan was given authority over this world system from Adam when he sinned and followed Satan's advice. Now Jesus is winning it back (Romans 5:12-21). Satan will be condemned by Jesus' victory over sin on the cross. Again, using the present tense shows Jesus' assurance that it is as good as done!

LESSON FOR TODAY: We must always remember that Satan is a defeated foe. He was cast out of his original position in heaven because of pride (Ezekiel 28:16; Luke 10:18; Isaiah 14:12). His judgment was pronounced in Eden (Genesis 3:14-15). He was defeated by the cross (John 12:31). He will be cast to the earth in the tribulation (Revelation 9:1; 12:7-12), bound during the Millennium (Revelation 20:1-3) and then cast into the lake of burning sulfur forever (Revelation 20:7-10; Isaiah 27:1; 40:23-24; 2 Thessalonians 2:8).

3. SATAN DEFEATED ON THE CROSS (Hebrews 2:14-15)

The culmination of the battle between God and Satan which started in Eden ended as God predicted, with Satan painfully wounding Jesus but with Him defeating Satan (Genesis 3:15). But it was a terrible battle, the worst ever. Jesus, as a man, faced all the hate, violence and evil Satan and all his demons could throw at Him. They literally drug Him through hell for

those hours, totally separated from God and facing it as a man. Yet He stayed faithful and endured, paying the price for every sin we would ever commit (Hebrews 2:14-15; Colossians 2:15).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan and his forces are defeated foes, having given their all to destroy Jesus on the cross, but being beaten by Him instead (Hebrews 2:14-15; 1 Peter 3:18-22). Now they are free to continue their work because God still honors man's free will and allows each one to decide whom they want to serve. They have been condemned and sentenced, now they are awaiting that sentence to begin. Knowing their time is short they strive to do all the evil they can against God and His people. When Jesus returns Satan and his demons will be cast into the lake of fire forever (Matthew 25:41; Revelation 20:1-15).

Jesus defeated death on the cross. He paid for every sin, then said "It is finished (John 19:30)." Only then did He voluntarily leave His body for there was no more any need to suffer in humiliation (John 19:30). Every sin had been paid for, Satan and his forces had been defeated. Technically Jesus didn't die for our sins, He suffered for them and died because His work was done. Sin did not kill Jesus, nor did Satan. It wasn't a matter of waiting to see if He'd come back to life. He voluntarily died and so He also voluntarily came back to life.

4. SATAN DEFEATED BY THE RESURRECTION (Ephesians 4:8)

Jesus' resurrection and ascension showed His victory over Satan on the cross. He freed us from sin and gave us eternal life (Ephesians 4:8).

CONCLUSION TO THE LIFE OF JESUS

Jesus is our **example** in how to have victory over Satan and his demons. At the start of His ministry He cast out many demons (Matthew 4:23-24; Mark 1:39,34). In the Gadarenes He cast demons out of two men (Matthew 8:28-34; Mark 5:1-17; Luke 8:20). He cast demons out of the daughter of a Canaanite woman (Matthew 15:21 Mark 7:20), and cured a demonized man (Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-36). He healed a boy with seizures and demons (Matthew 17:14-20). He cast seven demons out of Mary Magdalene as well as out of other women followers (Luke 8:2; Mark 16:9).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Jesus is our example in delivering people from demonizing. Before casting them out He rebuked them (took their power away) (Matthew 17:18; Luke 9:42). Then He "drove" them out (Mark 1:39). He did it verbally (Matthew 8:16), not by a certain ritualistic procedure. He didn't let the demons speak (Mark 1:34; Luke 4:41), except Legion, and that was just to give his name so others would know what was happening (Mark 5:9). He never let them say who He was (Mark 1:25; Luke 4:35; Mark 3:11-12). He told them to "be quiet and come out" (Luke 4:35; Mark 1:25). Other times He told them to "go" (Matthew 8:32). Sometimes He was quite far from the person whom He was delivering (Matthew 15:21-28; Mark 7:24-30). When He cast them out He forbid them to ever return again (Mark 9:25).

The King of Kings and Lord of Lords invaded the kingdom of Satan, but He did it in the form of a man. His first coming brought out all the opposition the enemy could muster against Him. He came to rescue mankind from the consequences of sin. The darkness opposed Him but He was victorious (John 1:5; 3:19; 8:12).

Satan and his demons are defeated, and Jesus shares that victory with us. However until Jesus comes for the second time and Satan and all demons are removed, the battle continues. Satan can no longer attack Jesus directly, so he takes his fury out on God's people –

Jews (because they are God's chosen people) and Christians (because we are children of God). However we can have victory because we fight a defeated foe! But we must learn spiritual warfare to do so. The rest of the books in the New Testament add further detail to how to have victory over our enemy.

REFERENCES TO THE SPIRIT WORLD IN THE GOSPELS

MATTHEW

4:1-11, 24
6:13
7:22
8:16,28-34
9:32-35
10:1,25
11:18
12:22-30,43-45
13:19,24,28,37,39
15:21-28
16:18-23
17:14-21

MARK

1:12,13,21-28,32-34,39
3:11-15,22-30
4:15
5:1-20
6:7,13
7:24-30
8:33
9:14-29,38-40
16:9,17

LUKE

4:1-13,,33-37,41
6:18
7:21,33
8:2,12,26-39

9:1,37-43,49-50
10:1-20
11:14-26
13:10-17,32
22:3,31-32,53

JOHN

6:70
7:20
8:44,48=52
10:20-21
12:31
13:2,27
14:30
16:11

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. Why does Satan try to use those who are close to us to influence us in wrong ways?
2. Why is laying hands on someone who is demonized while you pray effective?
3. What are some Bible verses that state that Satan has been defeated by Jesus? Write them down, memorize them, and keep them with you so you never forget that we have victory in Jesus.
4. What have you learned about spiritual warfare and bringing deliverance to others through this study? Name as many lessons as you can.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

If you have completed this portion of Spiritual Warfare in the Bible please let me know. I would enjoy knowing what you thought of it, what you learned, and what I can do to improve it. Also let me know if you have any questions or prayer requests. Thanks and may God continue to bless you as you serve Him. Jerry Schmoyer jerry@schmoyer.net

III. NEW TESTAMENT

Jesus' first coming was God's invasion of enemy occupied territory. He landed behind enemy lines to begin the work of setting the captives free (Isaiah 42:7; 49:9; Luke 4:18-21). He provided freedom from bondage by His work on the cross (Luke 13:12; Romans 6:18, 22). He showed the way to have victory through the light that overcame the darkness (John 1:5; 3:19; 8:12). When His mission was completed He ascended to heaven.

However, the fact that He left didn't mean the war ended. Although defeated and awaiting his ultimate doom, Satan is still free to attack God through His people. Because he knows his end is near he works all the harder to wreak havoc on God's people and work. God allows Satan freedom to attack because that is part of allowing mankind a free will. Also, God uses Satan's evil to show mankind their need of Him and for His people to grow in faith as we trust Him and learn to fight.

Now it is Christians who are the ones in enemy-occupied territory. Jesus has called us to be the light of the world. It is up to us to spread His message of deliverance. But the darkness tries to put out our light so none will be attracted to it (John 1:5; 3:19; 8:12). Satan and his demons try to get us back into bondage and misery. It is their entire focus, day and night, and all their skill and energy are focused on bringing this about. We know that God is greater (1 John 4:4) and His kingdom will prevail (Revelation 19-22), but still the battle rages.

So the Christian life is a life of warfare. As the book of Acts shows, that has always been the case. We are at war: war with our sin nature and war with Satan and his forces. That was true for the Christians who were left when Jesus returned to heaven as well. As the early church grew we see the battles continuing. We live in a Satan-controlled world (1 John 5:19). We must fight. God has given us the equipment we need (2 Corinthians 10:4; Ephesians 6:10-20). We can learn how to have victory in our battles by studying the victories, and failures, of those who have gone before. The book of Acts shows examples of those who have already fought their spiritual battles. The writings of Luke, Paul, Peter, John and others help us learn how to apply Jesus' victory to our own life.

The book of Acts records the growth of the early church. This comes about through evangelism. The Christians are young believers with much to learn, including spiritual warfare. Satan continued to do all he could to stop and destroy the young church before it grew large and strong. There are about 150 references to the spirit world in the Gospels (many of these are from parallel accounts found in more than one gospel) but about 178 additional such references in the rest of the New Testament, so spiritual warfare by no means ended with the ascension. If there is any change in Satan's tactics between the Gospels and Acts it would be that he attacked Jesus directly and overtly when He was on earth.

However, in Acts we see more deceptive, subtle ways of working to bring about their destruction. That doesn't make him any less dangerous for us, but actually more dangerous. He works harder to cover his trail and make what he does appear like it is something else (emotional disorder, chemical imbalance, etc.). He attacks more from within instead of just from without. He still uses persecution, but has become adept at dividing families, churches and even nations from within. The battle continues, it just changes a bit. If anything, it is more difficult to fight a subtle, hidden foe than one who is obvious and easily seen.

Spiritual warfare has not decreased. Rather it has increased through the centuries. God tells us it will continue to get worse and worse until Jesus returns. The book of Revelation has the most references to Satan and evil spirits – about 86 references. We know that the nearer to the end times we come, the more active Satan and his forces will be. God has given us His Word to teach us how to live for Him in these days of increased warfare. There is much instruction for us in Acts and the Epistles.

chapter	1-7	8-12	13-28						
area	JERUSALEM	JUDEA - SAMARIA	ENDS OF THE EARTH						
people	JEWS	SAMARITANS	GENTILES						
men	PETER	PHILIP (Peter/Paul)	PAUL						
church	ESTABLISHMENT	EXTENSION	EXPANSION						
time	2 YRS (33-35)	13 YRS (35-48)	14 YRS (48-62)						
Paul's travels		Missionary Jour	1MJ	2MJ	3MJ	Rome 1	Trip	Rome	...
		Chapters	13-14	16-18	19-20	21-28			
		Years	1 ½	2 ½	4	5	5	1	...
New Test. Books		James	Mark Gal.	I The s II The s	I Cor II Cor Rom	Eph Col Phil e Phili Acts	ITi m Tit u Mt Lk I Pt II Pt	II Tim Heb Jud	Jn I Jn II Jn III Jn Rev

A. EVENTS (Acts)

1. PENTECOST AND AFTER (Acts 1-4)

The book of Acts opens with **Jesus returning to heaven** after His victory over sin and Satan while on earth (Acts 1:1-11). Then after choosing Matthias to replace Judas (Acts 1:12-26) the believers waited for Jesus' promised gift, the Holy Spirit. When He came they had God's power and presence to help them in their life and ministry (Acts 2:1-13). The difference the Spirit makes is immediately seen in Peter's change from a coward who denied Jesus (Mark 14:66-72) to courageous spokesman (Acts 2:14-40). Three thousand responded by putting their faith in Jesus (Acts 2:41).

LESSON FOR TODAY: God's Spirit is essential for us to have victory in our battle against sin and Satan. Without His wisdom, guidance, power, peace and protection we wouldn't be able to stand against all that comes against us. It is essential to learn to listen to Him, be sensitive to His guidance, follow His leading and know how to tap into His power.

Satan had failed to stop Jesus from sealing his doom by His crucifixion and resurrection. Satan was not able to stop Jesus from defeating him at the cross and the empty tomb. But if he could keep the gospel message from spreading, he could still rule the vast majority of humanity. His goal at this point became to limit the power of the brand new Christian church, intending to keep it weak, keep it from growing. So he put all his energy into defeating the early Christians, hoping to extinguish the spark before it grew and spread, and keep mankind in darkness and bondage. However, as we follow the growth of the early church, we will see how his attempts worked against him!

His first approach was to bring **physical opposition**. The early Christians experienced rejection, suffering, persecution, and imprisonment (Acts 4:1-4). However, this opposition actually worked against Satan! The disciples responded to their trials with increased faithfulness and commitment (Acts 4:5-22). God used even the efforts of the enemy to make them stronger as they trusted in Him and saw His provision (Romans 8:28).

LESSON FOR TODAY: While Satan still attacks the church today, God often uses persecution to make the church stronger and increases their witness. He uses Satan's attacks for His purpose. All things may not be good in themselves, but God does use them for the good of those who love Him (Romans 8:28). It has been said that the church can stand anything but success. Where the church has not faced opposition but has been popularly accepted, there has often been a compromising that leads to weakness among God's people. While we never like to experience pain of any kind, God still uses it for His glory and our growth. This is a key way that we can defeat Satan's efforts in our lives. We must respond to trials with increased faithfulness and commitment, as the early disciples did. In that way, we can actually turn Satan's efforts against himself and take ground for God's kingdom.

2. ANANIAS & SAPPHIRA (Acts 5)

When external persecution didn't stop the church's growth (Acts 4:4) Satan tried **attacking from within**. He wanted to contaminate the spiritual life of the church members, as seen in the case of Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5:1-10). God revealed to Peter that Satan had

filled their heart so that they lied to the Holy Spirit by not being honest about the amount of money for which they sold their land (Acts 5:3).

The sin was not in keeping some of the money for themselves that would have been fine. The sin was lying and saying they gave all the money to the church in order to impress their fellow believers. They did this despite the Holy Spirit convicting them that such a statement was wrong. To set an example of the importance of holiness, God took the lives of these two carnal believers (Acts 5:3-11). They still went to heaven, but lost opportunity to serve and grow in this life. Again, God took the work of Satan and used it instead for His own glory. The Christians were taught vividly of the importance of holiness, and as a consequence, unbelievers were attracted to Jesus (Acts 5:42 – 6:1).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Our pride often keeps us from sharing with others the areas in life where we are struggling. As a result they stay hidden in the dark and we don't have encouragement and support. If Ananias or Sapphira would have shared their struggle with greed with someone it would have brought the work of the enemy against them into the light and weakened it. Prayer support and accountability would also have occurred. We play into the enemies' hands when we allow our pride to keep us from sharing our struggles with others.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan still uses this strategy today. He causes more damage to the church from within than he does through attacks from without. Christians hurting other Christians, churches hurting Christians, Christians hurting churches - this is a very common and successful approach of Satan even today. It can be more dangerous because when we are attacked from without we recognize the hand of the enemy and pull together in unity. When it is from within, though, we often fail to recognize it for the attack that it is. Instead of joining together against it we allow divisions to come among God's people. And again it is our pride that feeds this, wanting to be first and be right. It is our pride that keeps us from humbling ourselves and confessing our sins to God and others (when the sins have hurt others). Keeping our sin in the darkness allows it to grow; bringing it into the light exposes it and weakens it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: "Satan filled your heart" (Acts 5:3) is Peter's appraisal of what happened to Ananias and Sapphira. "Fill" (Greek 'pieroo') means "to fill to the full" and is the same word used for the filling of the Holy Spirit in Ephesians 5:18. There is no way of knowing to what extent they were demonized or exactly what Satan did. Surely he helped them go in the direction they themselves chose and gave them opportunity to believe his lies so as to deceive themselves as to what they were really doing. He may have fed their greed or even encouraged fearful thoughts of not having enough money. He did this to counter the conviction of sin in them by the Holy Spirit. We do know they always had a free will to resist and are totally responsible for their thoughts and actions. We don't know today, either, where human responsibility ends and demonic influence takes over, but we know both are often present. Whatever the balance, the cause, symptoms, results and cure are the same. Don't waste time trying to figure out details about what demons do and how they do it. Focus on the solution, not the problem! And the solution starts with the person who is demonized admitting and confessing the sin in his life that has allowed the demons to work. They don't cause a sin, they enhance a sin that is already there, and so it must be removed and stopped so the demons stop as well. As it has been said, if you want to keep the rats away, get rid of the garbage!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Peter states that Satan enticed them to lie to the Holy Spirit. Whether this was literally Satan or one of his demons we don't know. Often we say that 'Satan did ____' when we know it wasn't personally him, but done by his forces. Perhaps it was Satan himself since this was a direct, frontal attack on the young church. If the flame could be distinguished before it took root and spread, then the church could be severely crippled. If it

was a demon assigned to destroy them, saying 'Satan' did it is still applicable for they are all his forces working with him for the same effect. It would be most unlikely that Satan would personally attack any of us today. He has far greater places to exert his influence and has plenty of demons to work against us. It doesn't take Satan to help us sin, the weakest demon, along without sin nature, can bring about plenty of sin in us because we freely go along with it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The specific sins that Ananias and Sapphira were guilty of were greed, pride, lies and deception to cover the lies. They were also guilty of jealousy (of Barnabas Acts 4:32-37), and that is greed and pride combined. Their attitude to material things was idolatry, for they put something before God. Idolatry is really spiritual adultery (Jeremiah 3:8-10; Ezekiel 16:23-43; 23:24-30; Revelation 17:1-5). It is clearly forbidden by God (Exodus 20:3,4,23; 23:224). Pride is also seen in wanting to impress everyone with their generosity and have the affirmation which Barnabas had just received (Acts 4:32-37).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Fear of not having enough money for themselves in the future probably entered in as well. Seldom is there a sin that doesn't have fear as part of it somewhere! As do all sins, it starts in the mind (Judges 2:10-13; Ezekiel 14:7) and then becomes an action. When anything is more important to us than God there are demons who receive that adoration and 'worship' that we bestow on the object (Zechariah 10:2; 1 Corinthians 10:19-21).

LESSONS FOR TODAY: When a demon has access to one person that demon can also claim anyone that person becomes attached to, emotionally or physically (1 Corinthians 6:16). Emotional soul ties or physical sexual activity open a person to the demonizing of another.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Peter was made aware of what was happening so he could deal with the sin. As the leader he was responsible for those under him. God gives insights into the workings of demons so their work can be defeated to those with a need to know. When dealing with something demonic always pray for supernatural insight, wisdom and protection so you will be able to defeat the plans of the enemy. Some have the gift of distinguishing between spirits as part of their spiritual gift mix (1 Corinthians 12:10; Acts 13:6-12). If so, it must be used wisely and with maturity, always in total dependence on God so the person isn't misled or deceived.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God is a holy God and does not allow sin. He uses this first clear rebellion as an example to show how He feels about sin, but in His mercy He doesn't deal with every sin among His believers in this way. God did the same when He first formed the Jewish nation (Exodus 32:1-35). In each case, starting the Jewish nation or the church, He showed His holiness by bringing strict judgment at the first sin. He doesn't enforce the same penalty of death on subsequent sinners, not because He shouldn't but because He chooses to show mercy. His failure to judge our every sin today is not weakness, but mercy, certainly not something we should take advantage of. Every sin of lying, greed, jealousy, fear, etc., like Ananias and Sapphira also deserves death like they received. If you don't know of anything else you can thank God for, then you can certainly thank Him for not striking you dead for sin.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God promises to bring good out of all things (Romans 8:28). That happened here. A new respect for God and fear of sin gripped the church (Acts 5:5, 11) which led to renewed reverence for God and an increased motivation for holiness. This strengthened the church and allowed God to work through them all the more (Acts 5:12, 15-16). A great number of people were attracted to Jesus and joined (Acts 5:14) but others without pure motives stayed away (Acts 5:13). God's power was manifested in many being healed and delivered from demonizing (Acts 5:15-16). To have God's power in your life or your church there must be cleansing from sin and a deep desire for holiness. Revival starts with a deep awareness of the holiness of God and sinfulness of man.

3. PETER'S SHADOW DELIVERS (Acts 5)

To validate the **authenticity of the message** the disciples were bringing, God did the same kinds of miracles through them that He did through Jesus. "As a result, people brought the sick into the streets and laid them on beds and mats so that at least Peter's shadow might fall on some of them as he passed by. Crowds gathered also from the towns around Jerusalem, bringing their sick and those tormented by evil spirits, and all of them were healed" (Acts 5:15-16).

LESSON FOR TODAY: These special manifestations of spiritual power through healing and deliverance have not been seen since the first days of the early church, nor should they have been (1 Corinthians 13:8). At the start of the church, with Satan's attacks, God made sure the spark took hold and grew. He validated and authenticated His servants when it was needed, where the church had not been established before, but as it took root these manifestations faded. Do not think these should regularly occur everywhere today or something is wrong with the church. These are necessary to open a new area of darkness to God's truth, but not what a growing Christian builds his faith on. God is always able, and will do these kinds of miracles again in the Tribulation (Revelation 11:1-6). These signs had, and still have their place. But that place is not as part of everyday life in areas where the church has been established. So, when we see signs like this, we should be careful how we interpret them. Satan can and does counterfeit these things as well (Matthew 7:22-23; 24:44; Mark 13:20-22; Revelation 16:24). We live by faith, not by sight (2 Corinthians 5:7).

Satan continues to stir up problems within the church today as he did then. Tension, jealousy and competition took root not just in Ananias and Sapphira but in others as well. What was given by those who sold their land was intended to help the poor among them, yet some felt they weren't getting their fair **share of food and clothing** (Acts 6:1). The church responded by ordaining deacons to make a fair distribution of the resources to those in need (Acts 6:1-7).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan's strategy is still to bring division. Jesus says our distinguishing mark as Christians is to be love (John 18:35). Satan has many subtle but effective ways of dividing friends, couples, families and churches. Many times these things happen and he or his demons aren't even involved for our sin nature brings these about without his influence. Even so, his demons are always there to provide whatever 'help' they can to bring division among believers. Pray regularly against that. Encourage others to do the same. Be alert to small things that can easily grow into big problems. Pray, give counsel, encourage and show love to all.

As the early church grew Satan continued to attack from within and without. He continued to stir up the political and religious leaders to bring more persecution by having **James killed** (Acts 12:1-2) and **Peter arrested** awaiting death (Acts 12:3-4).

How did the disciples counter this strategy? Or rather we should ask how God's Spirit led them to counter Satan's persecution without and division within. They did exactly as they saw Jesus do when attacked. They faithfully persevered in their mission. They weren't discouraged or swayed into changing their focus. They went out by twos and spread His Word wherever they went. Large numbers turned to Jesus for salvation. That, of course, brought up much demonic opposition but it also brought many people freedom from demonizing (Acts 8:5-13). Everything they accomplished was done in Jesus' name (Acts 4:7).

4. MANY HEALED & DELIVERED (Acts 8:1-8)

For the next two years the church continued to grow despite persecution. In fact, persecution caused much of the growth. As believers were forced to flee from Jerusalem they took the Good News of Jesus with them wherever they went (Acts 8:1). One of the reasons God allowed the persecution was to move the people out so they would fulfill the great commission (Matthew 28:18-20; Acts 1:8). Again God used Satan's attacks for His purpose (Romans 8:28).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Again we see that God always uses what Satan planned for evil to bring about good (Genesis 50:20). He uses specific individual events intended for evil in the lives of certain individuals, including us, to bring about His plan. He also uses attacks against His Body as a whole and brings good from it as well. God is sovereign over Satan (1 John 4:4) and limits what he is allowed to do (Job 1:6-12; 2:1-6). Satan and his demons eventually go too far and overplay their hand, causing the person or group they are attacking to become more alert and turn to God for help. When they overplay their hand people become aware that something unusual is happening and they are in a spiritual war (2 Corinthians 2:5-11). Never fear, God is in control, or panic when it seems demons are winning. God is ALWAYS in control and always has a plan and purpose.

As the church spread into new cultures they found themselves confronted by a different spiritual world view, a greater openness to contact with spiritual forces of any kind. The Jews believed evil spirits were everywhere and behind virtually anything negative. Various and strange means were used to drive demons out, but only had success when they used god's name, and even then it was minimal.

In the Greco-Roman world 'magic' was common and well recognized. Contact with a supernatural power who could bring protection against disease, bring revenge by harming an enemy, cause another to fall in love or to attain power over others or to foretell the future was a part of everyday life. When King Herod heard about Jesus and the miracles He was performing his Greco-Roman world view led him to believe that Jesus really was John the baptizer, the one he had killed, come back to life (Matthew 16:14-16).

When the Jews came into these cultures they brought their deeper understanding of and power over these evil forces. As a result, some who sought to use these forces for their own gain were attracted to the Jews. When Christians started moving into these cultures they brought with them something unknown before – power over unseen forces in the name of Jesus. This, along with physical healings, validated their message as being from God.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Today, too, we must be aware of the spiritual world view of the culture to which we are ministering. The Western world is, for the most part, closed to recognizing spiritual powers behind what happens. Third World countries, especially those with animistic beliefs, see supernatural powers and forces at work all around them. Demons adapt to and work within the beliefs of the people in the culture where they are assigned. In the West they do all they can to hide their identity but in animistic cultures they do all they can to manifest their presence and therefore bring fear on those around them.

Thus when Philip went to Samaria with their Greco-Roman worldview he faced a different audience than he had in Jerusalem. "When the crowds heard Philip and saw the miraculous signs he did, they all paid close attention to what he said. With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city" (Acts 8:6-8).

LESSON FOR TODAY: In cultures today that don't have a Christian heritage or much of a gospel witness God still uses physical healing and deliverance from demonic influence or even dreams to show His power and bring others to His truth. I personally have seen this many times in India, especially in dark northern India.

5. SIMON MAGUS (Acts 8)

As word of the Christians' power in the name of Jesus spread, a man named Simon who practiced 'sorcery' heard of it (Acts 8:9). He had been using local traditions and pagan religions to remove demonic influence but with limited success. The powers he contacted to overcome the demons were demonic themselves, and therefore all of this was forbidden by God (Leviticus 19:26; Deuteronomy 18:10; 2 Kings 16:5; 17:17).

The word translated 'sorcerer' in the Bible is the Greek word 'magos.' Our word 'magic' comes from this but the real meaning does not refer to sleight of hand tricks which we associate with magicians today. It refers to those with supernatural abilities. It can be translated magician, sorcerer, wizard, enchanter, astrologer or even wise men ('Magi' in Matthew 2). Actually, the word started with the 'wise men' of the east, especially Babylon. These were men with learning and education that far exceeded anyone in their culture. This superior knowledge caused others to look up to them as something 'supernatural'. Daniel was one of these learned men who had great wisdom and insight (Daniel 2:12-48; 4:6, 18; 5:7-8, 15). As Greek culture spread into this area they picked up this word and applied it to anyone who did special acts or had special powers.

Simon used his demonic connections to impress the people around him (Acts 8:10) but when Philip came with his greater powers many came to Jesus and were baptized, including Simon himself who followed Philip everywhere because this new power was greater than anything he had seen (Acts 8:13). Simon, acting from his sin nature, tried to buy the power Philip had (Acts 8:18-19). Peter, who had come up from Jerusalem to help with the great working of God's Spirit that had broken out in Samaria, sternly rebuked Simon who immediately repented (Acts 8:20-24). God was teaching His followers that He bestows His powers freely and not to the highest bidder.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Unfortunately there are still many like Simon in the church today, those who want to use God and His power for their own benefit. Many are overly impressed with works of power, sign gifts and the like. They want the most and the best for themselves. They focus on the supernatural instead of the God behind the supernatural. Pride lures them in dangerous directions like it did Simon. God's message is the same as it was then – repent and stop trying to use God for your own glory!

Today it is easy to find those who are impressed with the power behind spiritual warfare and bringing deliverance to those who are demonized. They are in awe of demonic powers and spend way too much time and energy focusing on them. Instead our focus must go to God and His glory. Don't let demons, or those who are gifted to fight them, impress you or distract you from giving your attention and glory to Jesus alone. Don't make a god of spiritual warfare. It is a means to an end, not an end in itself!

6. BAR-JESUS (ELYMAS) (Acts 13)

The next clear incident of spiritual warfare recorded in Acts happened about a dozen years after the incident with Simon, about fifteen years after Jesus' resurrection. Paul had come to salvation and started his training (Acts 9), and Peter had begun taking the Gospel to the Gentiles (Acts 10-11). Persecution continued as James was killed, and Peter was imprisoned and awaiting death (Acts 12:1-4) until God supernaturally intervened and released Peter (Acts 12:5-19). Then Paul and Barnabas left on their first missionary journey (Acts 13:1-3). When they reached Cyprus they met strong Satanic opposition (Acts 13:4-12). Since Jesus Himself had found Himself in numerous power encounters with Satan and demons, it is no surprise that His followers would experience the same opposition as they continued His mission and ministry.

Bar-Jesus, a Jewish sorcerer and false prophet who had a lot of influence with the local official, opposed Paul and Barnabas when they tried to present the gospel to him (Acts 13:4-12). Bar-Jesus is also called Elymas, meaning "sorcerer". The same word, 'magos,' is used of him as was used of Simon Magus (Acts 8). That man was a Gentile but Bar-Jesus was a Jew and was demonized (Acts 13:10). He was Satan's pawn against God and His work in the continuing battle of Satan to defeat God's Kingdom (Genesis 3:15). The results of who won this power encounter between Satan (through Bar-Jesus) and God (through Paul) would determine who would have the most influence on the leaders and people of Cyprus. The kingdom of darkness was again challenging the kingdom of light (John 1:5; 3:19; 8:12).

Paul was not intimidated but gave Bar-Jesus direct eye contact (Acts 13:9) and gave him the strongest recorded rebuke he ever gave anyone: "Then Saul, who was also called Paul, filled with the Holy Spirit, looked straight at Elymas and said, 'You are a child of the devil and an enemy of everything that is right! You are full of all kinds of deceit and trickery. Will you never stop perverting the right ways of the Lord? Now the hand of the Lord is against you. You are going to be blind, and for a time you will be unable to see the light of the sun.' Immediately mist and darkness came over him, and he groped about, seeking someone to lead him by the hand" (Acts 13:9-11).

How did Paul know this man was a pawn of Satan and seeking to undermine God's ministry there? God's Spirit must have shown Him, as He did Peter about Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5; 1 Corinthians 12:10).

LESSON FOR TODAY: When encountering a demon in someone who is demonized do not let them intimidate you or cause any fear. God is greater (1 John 4:4) and we have nothing to fear (2 Timothy 1:7). Looking them in the eye is important, for this contact establishes your authority in Jesus over them and puts them under Jesus' authority. Our eyes show truth, along with who we are and the words we speak. This truth is greater than anything that lives in lies and deception. Be sensitive to God's Spirit as He shows you what you need to know to have victory against these demonic forces.

God's judgment on Bar-Jesus was very appropriate – physical blindness to illustrate the spiritual blindness he already had (Acts 13:11-12). Everyone present saw God's power defeat Satan's power and that opened the way for the gospel to spread in that area. Hopefully his time in darkness brought Bar-Jesus to a realization of the truth and he found the true light in Jesus.

7. PHILIPPI MEDIUM (Acts 16:16-18)

Paul and Barnabas continued their mission trip for about a year and a half (Acts 13:13 – 14:28). Wherever they went the gospel spread and people, Jews and Gentiles, came to Jesus for salvation. In fact, so many Gentiles were coming that the leaders of the Jewish Christian church met in Jerusalem to consider if Gentiles would have to become Jews also in order to be Christians (Acts 15). The clear answer was no. Paul then went back to the churches he had started on his first missionary journey, taking Silas and later Timothy with him (Acts 16:1-15). God led them through Asia Minor and across the sea to Philippi which was in Europe (Acts 16:6-12). They established a small church there in the home of Lydia (Acts 16:13-15). This sets the background for the next power encounter between Satan's forces and God's people, about two years after the previous encounter with Bar-Jesus.

When going to the place of prayer in Philippi, Paul and those with him were met by a young slave girl who "had a spirit by which she predicted the future" (Acts 16:16). The Greek word translated "spirit by which she predicted the future" is "python." Thus she was a "pythoress," a name used to refer to those indwelt by a spirit from the Greek god Apollo who gave oracles. This is the name of the dragon/snake, Apollo, killed at Delphi who guarded the priestess there and gave her oracles. Apollo was worshipped as the python god at the shrine of Delphi in central Greece. This Apollo spirit was the spirit by which the 'god' spoke to the person he indwelt, enabling them to pronounce oracles. The people thought Apollo was speaking through this young slave girl, especially since it was probably a male voice they heard coming out of her. While there are many explanations to what some today call 'speaking in tongues' (see with 1 Corinthians 11-13), there are those who feel that at least some of what was happening in Corinth, and even today, is done by these types of demons. Paul knew the true source of the slave girl's oracles was a demon. The girl was just their medium.

A medium is someone through whom a demon speaks (Isaiah 8:19; Leviticus 19:31; 20:27; Deuteronomy 18:9-13; Acts 16:16-18). For many days she followed them shouting, "These men are servants of the Most High God, who are telling you the way to be saved" (Acts 16:17). This shows us that the demons immediately recognized Jesus as God and couldn't deny who He was and is. Perhaps some of this has to do with the girl herself knowing who He is through the demons and wanting to be free from them.

Whatever the cause of her continual comments, Paul became very troubled. It wasn't what she was saying, but knowing that she was demonized that bothered him. The Greek word for 'troubled', *dispono*, has the idea of grief, pain and anger all together. It describes how the Jewish leaders felt when they heard John and Peter were still preaching (Acts 4:2). Paul was upset because the young girl was being victimized by the demons as well as her owner. Therefore he turned and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her!" At that moment the spirit left her (Acts 16:18).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Paul didn't go out of his way to track down demonic activity, but when it was there he dealt with it. When demons interfered with his ministry or the lives of those he was ministering to, he expelled them. We can and must do the same thing. We don't have to go searching for demons to attack; we are to go about our daily lives and ministry. But when demons interfere with us or those we are ministering to, then we are to remove them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Notice that Paul cast the demon(s) out in Jesus' name (Acts 16:18). We have no power or authority of our own to do this, only in Jesus. Jesus has given us that same authority to use today (John 14:12; Matthew 28:18-20). Satan deceives us into thinking we are powerless victims but that is a lie. As God's children we have access to the

same resources Jesus did when He lived on earth. For more information about this see the following sections: II. LIFE OF JESUS, C. SPIRITUAL WARFARE IN JESUS' MINISTRY, 6. POWER & AUTHORITY GIVEN (Luke 9:1; 10:1, 17-19).

We have this power available to us as well (Acts 1:8; John 14:12). It is His power that transforms us into a new creation (2 Corinthians 5:17) as He gives us new life (Ephesians 4:24; Colossians 3:10). His power delivers us from temptations and trials when we rely on it (1 Corinthians 10:13; 2 Corinthians 12:14). He has power to put His divine nature in us (2 Peter 1:4) and give us live abundant now and eternal life in heaven (John 3:16; 10:10).

LESSON FOR TODAY: How did the apostles cast demons out? Paul brought deliverance by a word (verbally, just as Jesus did). He said, "In the name of Jesus I command you to come out" (Acts 16:16-18). Paul was not establishing a pattern for us to following by using cloths to cast out demons. When God was showing everyone that Paul was His spokesman there was a time when just touching a cloth that Paul had used brought deliverance (Acts 19:12). That was a special event, not a pattern to follow! When directed by God, Paul defeated the demons in Elymas (an unbeliever) by making him blind so he'd stop interfering with God's word (Acts 13:6-12).

We have many examples of the disciples casting out demons, too. Jesus gave them power and commanded them to use it (Matthew 10:1; Luke 10:17; Mark 6:7; 16:17). They cast out demons as a regular part of their ministry (Mark 9:38; Luke 10:17). Paul cast out demons (Acts 16:16-18; 19:12) and so did Philip (Acts 8:7). When trying to do it in their own strength (without dependence on God) they failed (Mark 9:18, 28-29).

8. IDOLATRY ATHENS, CORINTH (Acts 17)

Paul and those who went him then went to Corinth to start a church there. The culture was very sinful with much demonic worship involved in the lives of the people. When they came to Jesus for salvation they still had their demonic openings and involvement. Paul dealt with much of this in his letters to the Corinthians (see with 1, 2 Corinthians). One of the issues was sacrifices made in pagan worship being accepted by demons (1 Corinthians 10:20-21).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Today, too, demons go behind modern 'idols' and take the praise and worship given them. It somehow empowers them to do more evil. False cults and religions lead the list, singing and acting 'idols' along with material things that are highly valued all fit in this category. God is a jealous God and doesn't want us involved with any kinds of idols at all (Exodus 20:5; 34:14; Deuteronomy 4:24; 5:9; Joshua 24:19).

9. PAUL AT EPHEBUS (Acts 19)

The pagan goddess Artemis was worshipped in Ephesus. The people there were Asiatic and thus animists who were really worshipping demons. She was a widely worshipped deity whose temple in Ephesus was one of the seven wonders of the ancient world. She was recognized by her followers as the greatest power in the universe. She was seen as savior, lord and queen and was worshipped by many long festivals. 'Missionaries' were sent out to spread her message. This cult was very influential and very rich.

Of course the power behind Artemis was demonic, and those who promoted her worship knew it. They used those powers to help her reputation, and therefore theirs as well, grow and

expand. She was recognized as the goddess over the underworld and the one with authority over all demons. In fact, these demons who served her were given Jewish, Egyptian and Greek names. The 'magic' she had, the supernatural power over natural forces, was demonic.

Because of Artemis, Ephesus became the main center for pagan demonic worship in all Asia Minor. Because of its key place in Asia Minor, geographically as well as culturally, Paul visited Ephesus at least twice (Acts 18:19-21; 19:1 – 20:1). Eventually the center of early Christianity moved from Jerusalem to Ephesus, then later to Rome itself. John and Mary lived in Ephesus. Because of its importance, Satan and his forces did all they could to oppose this. That is why spiritual warfare came to a head at Ephesus, as can be seen in the book of Acts as well as the epistle to the Ephesians, which was a circular letter read in all the churches in the area.

Luke records several of these power encounters between God and Satan during Paul's first visit to Ephesus.

A power encounter is a crisis point occurring in the on-going spiritual warfare between God and Satan. Paul was bringing the kingdom of light into Satan's kingdom of darkness. Satan was doing all he could to keep the area under his control. God gave Paul the ability to show God's greater power by doing "signs, wonders and miracles" (2 Corinthians 12:12; Romans 15:19). Towards the end of Paul's time there, God worked in a special way through Paul to show the people the power of Paul's God and message.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Again we see that in cultures today which don't have a Christian heritage or much of a gospel witness God still, many times, uses physical healing and deliverance from demonic influence and even dreams to show His power and bring others to His truth.

POWER ENCOUNTER 1: HANDKERCHIEF HEALING

Those who merchandized Artemis made a good profit by selling amulets and charms that claimed to have power to heal. Many of the illnesses were demonic, as were the 'cures.'

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan can cause illness: crippled limbs (Luke 13:11), Paul's thorn in the flesh (eye disease? - II Corinthians 12:7), muteness (sometimes dumbness, too - Matthew 9:32-33; 12:22; Mark 9:17-18,24-25), blindness (Matthew 12:22), seizures (Mark 1:26; 9:17-18,20,22,25; Matthew 17:15,18; Luke 9:39), deafness (Mark 9:17-18,20,25), sores (skin cancer?) (Job 2:7), boils and other painful afflictions (Psalm 78:49 - the plagues in Egypt were demon-caused), physical torments of all kinds (Revelation 9:5,10), painful illness (Job 2:7-8), and even death (Job 1:19). Since he can cause these things he can seem to 'heal' them by stopping what he did/does to cause them in the first place. Only God can heal, but Satan can counterfeit that by making it seem like he heals.

If the God Paul preached was greater than Satan and the demons who worked through Artemis, then everyone assumed He would be able to do what they did and heal people. "God did extraordinary miracles through Paul, so that even handkerchiefs and aprons that had touched him were taken to the sick, and their illnesses were cured and the evil spirits left them" (Acts 19:11-12). These free articles of Paul's worked much, much better than Satan's counterfeits.

LESSONS FOR TODAY: This is not a standard way to evangelize or to do deliverance. In fact, Paul probably wasn't aware of it when this began. Perhaps helpers or others took these cloths and gave them to needy friends. God honored their faith and used this to verify

His power through His servant Paul. Of course it wasn't Paul who healed, only God. But this validated Paul's claims to have the best and right power with him. It was a necessary first step to gain a hearing so Paul could spread the good news of Jesus Christ. We must not get involved in objects that seem to have supernatural power for our full faith and attention must only be on God Himself. These things are counterfeit, even superstitions, good luck charms, etc., are to be totally avoided.

POWER ENCOUNTER 2: SONS OF SCEVA

As word of God's power through Paul spread there were those who saw Jesus' name as a magic charm they could use to their own advantage. "Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, 'In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out.' Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. One day the evil spirit answered them, 'Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?' Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding" (Acts 19:13).

Sceva, a Jew, was a self-proclaimed chief priest. He claimed to do Jewish exorcism but used occult ways to accomplish this. He thought he would try this new 'charm' so he could have better results in driving demons out, and therefore earning high fees for doing so. However using Jesus' name just brought him and his sons misery because they weren't believers. The people learned that Jesus isn't a magic word to use. Only a personal relationship with Him will bring victory.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Often demons work together in cooperation to make it seem like the human they used had the power to cast out demons. Really they were just working together to make it seem that way. One demon would attack a person, then another would indwell a false deliverer so that when the demon was commanded to be gone it would leave. It was all set up to make it look like the person had power to deliver. This deceived the person himself and those watching. But this time the demons from the demonized man overpowered the demonized deliver and beat him up. Demons don't always work together, though. They are filled with hate and jealousy and often take it out on each other, as happened this time.

LESSON FOR TODAY: When we feel confusion in our minds it may be from demonic interference, trying to confuse and mislead us. Other times, though, what we sense as confusion is conflict among the demons themselves as they struggle with each other for authority and influence, especially the leader is gone working elsewhere. The distraction and/or confusion the demonized person senses could be conflict among the demons themselves, for their self-centeredness, pride and ego isn't just manifested against us but against each other also. They cooperate out of fear and being overpowered, not for any other reason.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Our power and authority are in Jesus and His name, but we are not to use His name as a magic charm. We must always make sure there is no sin in our life, that we are right with God, and, of course, that we are His child through faith in Jesus.

POWER ENCOUNTER 3: BURNING SORCERY BOOKS

As it became more and more obvious that God's power shown through Paul was much greater than that the followers of Artemis claimed, many came to God for salvation. "When this

became known to the Jews and Greeks living in Ephesus, they were all seized with fear, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honor. Many of those who believed now came and openly confessed their evil deeds. A number who had practiced sorcery brought their scrolls together and burned them publicly. When they calculated the value of the scrolls, the total came to fifty thousand drachmas. In this way the word of the Lord spread widely and grew in power” (Acts 19:17-20).

LESSONS FOR TODAY: “Sorcery scrolls” refers to magic texts, adjurations, formulas, protection rituals, curses, incantations and similar things. Such things exist today as well and have an amount of power behind them – demonic power. Keep away from such things. If someone you minister to has them they must be destroyed – anything that can be used by demons to gain access to their lives or family must be destroyed.

When the Jews took possession of Canaan under Joshua they were told to not keep any of the objects they captured. Even animals and children were to be destroyed. They had been dedicated to Satan and were claimed by him. Those who used these things would be opening themselves up to the demonic powers to whom they had been dedicated. Today we must watch for things like literature and objects from other cults and religions, Ouija boards and other occult paraphernalia, pagan objects from primitive cultures, objects from Masonic or other secret societies, some Native American artifacts and the like. Pornography, drug or alcoholic supplies, music with a black or evil dimension, even certain movies or articles of clothing dedicated to darkness can allow access.

The solution is to remove and destroy such objects as being openings for demonic access. Ask for forgiveness for having them, cleanse the room from their presence, take back any access the enemy may claim and dedicate the space as well as yourself to Jesus. Ask Him to reveal to you anything else that may need to be dealt with.

When a room or object is under the control of an evil spirit for whatever reason they claim, dedicating it to God by painting crosses by dipping a finger in oil and making them on a wall is a good practice. Playing Christian music and leaving a small light on also are offensive to the forces of darkness. Of course praying and quoting scripture while making the crosses is important, too. We as a Christian have great power in blessing people, especially our own families. 'God bless you' is more than a slang or shallow comment. There's real power in it when one means it that way. It's a privilege to use and repeat it often to people. Distance doesn't seem to affect it at all. Of course there is something even more special about touching a person when we pray or ask God to bless them, but when at a distance it carries just as well. The power is in God Who is everywhere (omnipresent). Satan and demons are limited to one place at a time so they are at a distinct disadvantage in this, too.

This extended time in Ephesus turned out to be Paul's last freedom of movement for some time. From Ephesus he went to Jerusalem (Acts 21) where he was falsely charged and arrested (Acts 22). He spent the next several years in prison, finally being transferred to Rome (Acts 23-28) where the book of Acts ends. Paul was eventually released to travel some more, but his health had been broken and the brunt of the load of ministry which he had carried was now spread to many new evangelists and missionaries. Paul was again arrested and this time put to death in Rome. But during his travels and imprisonment he wrote letters to churches to stay in touch. We can learn much about spiritual warfare from these letters.

LESSON FOR TODAY: It must have been very frustrating for Paul to have to write letters to people and places he wanted to see in person. No doubt he wondered what purpose God would ever have in that. However that is what God used to form the majority of the New Testament and its teaching. Were Paul free to visit these places in person, millions of

Christians for two thousand years would not have had these priceless letters and their teachings. God always has a purpose in what He does. When things don't seem to make sense to you trust that God knows what He is doing (Romans 8:28).

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING. At the end of each major section in this paper you will find questions to help you remember and apply what you have learned. You can look back through what you have read for the answers if need be. You need a Bible, a notebook and a pen to do these questions.

If you want to send me your answers I would be glad to read them and offer comments or suggestions that might help you. You can write me at jerry@schmoyer.net. If you have any questions or prayer requests please feel free to write to me.

1. Why was it so important for the Holy Spirit to come to the believers on Pentecost?
2. What sins were Ananias and Sapphira guilty of?
3. What lessons can you learn from the account of Ananias and Sapphira?
4. List some lessons you can learn from the way Paul and the apostles brought deliverance to those who were demonized.
5. What were the 3 power encounters that took place in Ephesus in Acts 19? What was the outcome and why?
6. Have you ever been or are you now involved in a power encounter with Satan's forces? What can you learn from Acts 19 to help you have victory?
7. Why were the sorcery books burnt? What kinds of objects today should be burnt so they don't allow demonic influence to come?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

B. PAUL'S WRITINGS (Epistles)

1. GALATIANS

After Paul's first missionary journey, when the church leaders met in Jerusalem and decided a Gentile did not have to become a Jew to have salvation (Acts 15), Paul wrote his first letter, at least the first part of our New Testament. He wanted to get this important message to the churches of Asia Minor (also called Galatia) so he wrote what we call the book of Galatians and sent it ahead. He traveled back to these places at the start of his second missionary journey (Acts 16-18). Several truths concerning spiritual warfare are included in this book.

Demons counterfeit God's Truth. Paul tells the Galatians "But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel other than the one we preached to you, let him be eternally

condemned!" (Galatians 1:8) "Angel from heaven" could be one of God's angels, or a demonic counterfeit. Paul's point is that even an angel of God who speaks a different message is not doing what God wants, so certainly demons who have another gospel are possibilities. Works, pride, ritual, etc., do not bring man closer to God – He is found through truth, grace and humility.

Jesus took our curse and broke it. Paul quotes Deuteronomy 21:23, "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree" (Galatians 3:10-13). He has broken any and every curse against us, from sin or from demons or from someone who knowingly or unknowingly curses us.

LESSON FOR TODAY: For more information on curses and breaking them see under Life of Jesus, 5. Gadarenes Demoniac - Mark 5:1-20; Matthew 8:28-34; Luke 8:26-37.

2. 1 THESSALONIANS

This second missionary journey of Paul's took him further than his first. After revisiting the churches he started on his first missionary journey in Asia Minor (Galatia), God led him to Greece and the European continent. One of the places he visited there was Thessalonica. Not long after his visit he wrote them the letter we call 1 Thessalonians. Because he left suddenly after a short visit he wanted to write back to them and encourage them to stay faithful in their new life in Christ.

Satan hindered Paul's plans. Paul recognized that, even though God is sovereign and has ultimate say over everything, Satan's opposition kept Paul from visiting them again (1 Thessalonians 2:18).

LESSON FOR TODAY: We don't know what obstacles Satan used or how he accomplished this, but we know God used it for His glory by establishing the church even with Paul not there and with God using Paul's letters to them to benefit so many Christians over the years (Romans 8:28). God's purpose is never hindered, but from our perspective it can sometimes seem that the work of God is set back by Satan's opposition. Don't be surprised when you are opposed or when God seems to allow the opposition to seem to succeed. He will be the ultimate victor and He is in control of all that happens now as well.

Satan the tempter. Because he was concerned about their faith, thinking the tempter (Satan) might have tempted them, Paul sought to find out how they were doing spiritually (1 Thessalonians 3:5). He knew Satan would attack and do whatever he could to keep the people from growing spiritually.

*LESSON FOR TODAY: **SATAN'S PURPOSE** His goal is to rule the whole world instead of God. He was given authority over this world system by Adam when he sinned (2 Corinthians 4:4; Ephesians 2:2) and controls our world system (1 John 5:19). He rules over it (Matthew 4:8-9; John 12:31; Luke 4:5-7; John 14:30; 16:11). He is behind its values and world view (James 3:15). Presently he works to deceive the nations (Daniel 10:13,20; Matthew 4:8; Ephesians 6:12; Revelation 20:3,7-8; 16:14; 1 Kings 22:6-7). He leads mankind into idolatry (Psalm 96:5; 106:36-38; Leviticus 17:7; Deuteronomy 32:17). He especially wants to destroy God's special people: Israel (Revelation 12:13-17; 20:10; 2 Thessalonians 2:9) and the Church.*

SATAN'S WORK AGAINST ALL PEOPLE He works against the gospel, hardening hearts to God's truth (Matthew 13:19-22). He blinds their minds (2 Corinthians 4:3-4; 2 Thessalonians 2:7-10; Luke 8:12; Colossians 2:18). When they hear the truth Satan tries to snatch it from their minds (Mark 4:15; Matthew 13:19). He denies the truth (Genesis 3:1; 2 Timothy 4:3-4) and promotes false teaching (1 Timothy 4:1-2; 2 Thessalonians 2:9). As is true of any good

counterfeiter, he tries to make his deceptions as close to the truth as possible so as to deceive more. The authority of the Scriptures, the person and work of Jesus and salvation by grace are areas he especially tries to obscure so make sure anything you believe has these at its heart and core. Satan brings oppression on all he can. He does this through sickness such as dumbness (Mark 9:17-29), blindness (Matthew 12:22), deformity (Luke 13:11-17), epilepsy (Luke 9:37-43) and other ways. He also uses the following to oppress: mental illness (Mark 5:1-20; 9:14-29; Luke 9:39), sin (Genesis 3:13-24; Ephesians 2:2), lawlessness (2 Corinthians 6:15) and death (Revelation 18:2; 9:13-18).

SATAN'S WORK AGAINST BELIEVERS A primary objective of Satan is to oppose God's work and God's people. He oppresses and leads the persecution against the Jews (Revelation 12:13-17; 20:10; 2 Thessalonians 2:9). He works especially hard against believers, for we are the light in his darkness, the only threat on this work against his kingdom. Since he can no longer attack Jesus directly he does so indirectly by attacking His children. He accuses us before God (Job 1:6-21; 2 Corinthians 2:11; Revelation 12:9-10; Zechariah 3:1-2) but Jesus is our defense attorney, our Advocate when accused (1 John 2:1). Satan does all he can to oppose and hinder our service to God (2 Corinthians 4:4; 1 Thessalonians 2:18; 2 Corinthians 11:2-7; Zechariah 3:1; Matthew 13:19). He tries to infiltrate the church through false teaching (1 Timothy 4:1-2; 2 Thessalonians 2:9), false teachers (1 Timothy 4:1-3; 1 John 4:1; 2 Peter 2:1-2) and false 'Christians' (Matthew 13:38-40). While not all temptation comes from Satan and demons, he certainly does all he can to entice us into sin (2 Corinthians 2:11; 1 Timothy 3:7; 2 Timothy 2:26; 1 Corinthians 7:5) as he did when tempting Jesus. He will use our sin nature (James 1:14-15), the world system (1 John 2:15-16) or attack directly through demons (1 Corinthians 7:5). He can cause and use anger (Ephesians 4:27), pride (1 Timothy 3:6; 1 Chronicles 21:1; 1 Timothy 3:6), immorality (1 Corinthians 7:5), lies (Acts 5:1-3), doubting God's Word and goodness (Genesis 3:1-5; Luke 4:9-12), 'miracles' to deceive (Mark 4:8-9; 2 Corinthians 11:13-15; 2 Thessalonians 2:3,9-11), hypocrisy (John 8:44; Acts 17:22), self-sufficiency (1 Chronicles 21:1-7), worry and fear (1 Peter 5:7-9; Hebrews 2:14; Psalm 23:4), lack of faith (Luke 22:31-32; 1 Peter 5:6-10), physical affliction (Job 1:6-22; 2:1-7; John 8:44; 1 Corinthians 5:5; 1 Timothy 1:20) and sin of any kind (1 Thessalonians 3:5; Matthew 4:3; 1 Corinthians 10:19-21, 2 Corinthians 11:3,13-15; 1 John 3:8).

DEMON'S WORK AGAINST ALL Demons carry out Satan's commands and wishes. After enticing Adam and Eve to sin and getting authority over the world from them, Satan and his forces have continued trying to keep worship from God and getting it for themselves. They blind the minds of unbelievers (II Corinthians 4:4) and snatch the Word from their hearts (Luke 8:12). They do all they can to oppose God's work (Revelation 2:13). Since they can't attack God, they take their anger out on those who are God's -- His people (Jews and Christians today). Satan and his forces tempt Christians to lie (Acts 5:3), accuse and slander them before God (Revelation 12:10), hinder their work (I Thessalonians. 2:18), do anything possible to defeat them (Ephesians 6:11-12), tempt to immorality (I Corinthians 7:5) and incite persecution against them (Revelation 2:10). They promote human wisdom (1 Corinthians 2:12; 2 Corinthians 11:4; 1 John 4:5-6). They influence and control the nations (Daniel 10:13,20; Ephesians 6:12) and mislead them so they can destroy them (Isaiah 9:14). It must always be kept in mind, however, that God is in sovereign control. They can do nothing without God's permission (Job 1:6-12).

Physically they can give superhuman strength (Mark 5:4); physically torment (Revelation 9:5,10), emotionally torment (1 Samuel 16:14-23); do miracles (Revelation 16:13-14; 13:12-15), inflict disease (Matthew 9:33; Luke 3:11,16), indwell people (Matthew 8:28-34) and indwell animals (Matthew 8:31-32).

Emotionally they torment (1 Samuel 16:14-23), cause fear (1 Samuel 18:12,15; 2 Corinthians 11:4; 2 Timothy 1:7; Romans 8:15; Job 4:14-15), cause anger (1 Samuel 18:10-11), cause jealousy (1 Samuel 18:10-15) and harden consciences (1 Timothy 4:2).

Sexually they cause immorality (Revelation 9:21-22; 2 Timothy 3:1-9; 1 Timothy 4:1-3) and cause all kinds of impurity (Zechariah 13:2).

Mentally they cause bondage (2 Corinthians 11:4), influence the mind (Genesis 3:15; Ephesians 6:10-20; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Colossians 1:13), control the mind (1 Corinthians 10:20; 2 Corinthians 4:4), and deceive, mislead and lie to people (1 Timothy 4:1,6; 1 Kings 22:22-23; 2 Chronicles 18:20-23).

Religiously they promote false doctrine (1 John 4:1-3; 1 Timothy 4:1; 1 Kings 22:22; Revelation 16:13), counterfeit the truth (2 Corinthians 10:20-21), promote hypocrisy (1 Timothy 4:2), promote legalism (1 Timothy 4:3), use false prophets and false teachers (1 John 4:1; 1 Kings 22:22-23; 2 Chronicles 18:20-23), use fortunetelling and occult practices (Acts 16:16-18) and promote idolatry while receiving the worship of idols (Leviticus 17:7; Deuteronomy 32:17; Psalm 106:37; Revelation 9:20; Hosea 4:10-12; 5:4; Acts 16:16; 1 Corinthians 10:20).

DEMON'S WORK AGAINST BELIEVERS They especially work against believers by frustrating and opposing God's perfect will (Acts 16:16-18), putting obstacles in the path of those following God (1 Thessalonians 2:18; Romans 15:22), influencing believers to mislead other believers (Matthew 16:22-23.) and instigating things such as jealousy, pride and disunity (James 3:13-16). They seek to get believers to turn from God and living for Him (1 Timothy 4:1), they can cause physical torment (2 Corinthians 12:7), and they try to get us to operate by our own strength and ability (2 Timothy 3:5). All this work will intensify as the return of Jesus gets closer (1 Timothy 4:1).

3. 2 THESSALONIANS

Soon after writing 1 Thessalonians, Paul wrote another letter to the believers in Thessalonica. He warned them about the coming antichrist who will be used by Satan to try to destroy God's people and kingdom (2 Thessalonians 2:1-12). Paul knows that as the time of Jesus' return gets closer Satan works harder to cause all the damage he can.

4. 1 CORINTHIANS

After finishing his second missionary journey Paul went back to Antioch for a brief stay. Very soon, though, he went on another, a third missionary journey. During this time he wrote to what was probably his most problematic church, the church in Corinth. Although believers, the people there were thinking and living as unbelievers. Pride, greed, immorality, selfishness and jealousy were rampant everywhere in the church. Paul wrote them at least 4 letters but God only inspired and included two in the New Testament.

DISCIPLINE OF SIN: In one case, a man was living with his father's wife and the people were proud of this open minded attitude (1 Corinthians 5:1-2). Paul says they are to exclude him from the benefits of church fellowship to show him the seriousness of his sin and to keep others from being negatively influenced by his example (1 Corinthians 5:3-5). "Hand this man over to Satan" is the way he puts it (1 Corinthians 5:5). The purpose is so that his "sinful nature" (Greek word refers to the physical flesh, home of the sin nature) may be destroyed. Figuratively Paul is saying that Satan's world system will be so bad for him that he'll miss what he had in the church and will repent of his sin and return. Eternal salvation is not at stake here, but daily

fellowship and future reward is. Without God's protection this is even more susceptible to demonic attack. God is allowing this so it will bring this man to repentance and back to fellowship with God and the body of believers in Corinth. We see this same thing happening in 1 Timothy 1:18-20.

SEXUAL UNION CAUSES ONENESS: God created sexual intimacy to show the great oneness of believers and Jesus (Ephesians 5:25-32). Satan tries hard to destroy this model by perverting and destroying the model of sex as a special union between a husband and a wife.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan understands the power of human sexuality and uses it to gain control over people through their sin (Ephesians 5:3-6). When a demon has access to one person and that person physically unites themselves to another person, the sexual union allows that demon (or demons) to also have access to the other person. This does not have to be a marriage relationship, or even a love relationship. Paul says it happens even when one has sex with a prostitute (1 Corinthians 6:16). Therefore sexual activity with anyone before or outside marriage can be a direct opening to demonization. Any demons that have access to the person you are involved with will have immediate and instant access to you as well. It is like a spiritual AIDS infection, but there is no prevention, no 'safe sex' application.

When going through deliverance with someone, or for yourself, it is very important to confess any sexual sin and put it under the blood of Jesus. Then any demons who have claimed access through this sin must be commanded to be gone and not return. Ask to be filled with His Presence instead, and thank Him for His mercy!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Physical intimacy can lead to demonizing, and so can emotional intimacy. Soul ties in our past can be another opening for demons. Just like they can transfer from one person to another through a physical union like sex, so they can transfer through an emotional union as well. Souls can bond as well as bodies. When one gives their trust to another a bonding is formed. Bonds between mates, parents and children, godly friends, etc., are good and necessary. But when we bond with someone who is demonized then demons can use that as access to the other person. Souls become bonded, or tied together. If you have any of these in your past that you feel may not have been godly and healthy, confess them as sin and break the bond in Jesus' name.

SPEAKING IN TONGUES: Before salvation the Corinthian believers spoke in ecstatic utterances, prophecies, revelations, spells and curses through the 'power' of Artemis (for more information about this see 9. PAUL AT EPHESUS (Acts 19)). This was a regular part of their pagan worship, and was still happening in their church services. They were unable to distinguish demonic utterances from their pagan past to the 'languages' the Holy Spirit gave them as believers (1 Corinthians 12:1-3). Without knowing it, some were saying things that were blasphemous to God, so of course that didn't come from the Holy Spirit. Paul writes 3 chapters (1 Corinthians 12-14) showing the place, purpose and limits of speaking in 'tongues.'

LESSON FOR TODAY: Does God want us to speak in tongues today? Are they from the Holy Spirit or from demons (or both)? A correct understanding of 'tongues' is important for those involved in spiritual warfare.

*The Bible teaches that each believer is **filled with the Holy Spirit** at the moment of salvation (1 Corinthians 10:1ff; 12:3; 6:19; Eph. 4:5; Rom. 5:5). One cannot be saved without the Holy Spirit indwelling them (John 7:37-39; 14:16-17; 1 Corinthians 6:19-20). From there on it is not a matter of getting more of the Holy Spirit but of the Holy Spirit getting more of us! As we totally submit and live a holy life He fills and works through us.*

Then what about Acts 2, 8, 10 and 19, when the Holy Spirit came on those who were already believers? **Acts 2** is a one-time, non-repeatable experience (not even repeated in Acts 8, 10 or 19). Just like the Second Person of the Trinity made a unique, one-time entrance into the world through a virgin in a stable, so the Third Person made His entrance in a unique, one-time way. When Jesus came back to earth after the resurrection to the apostles, Paul or John on Patmos, He never repeated the virgin-in-a-stable entrance. Acts 2, also, is non-repeatable.

Acts 2 is a transition, from Old Testament law when the Holy Spirit only indwelt some believers some times, to New Testament grace, when the Holy Spirit indwells all believers for their whole life. The apostles had already accepted Jesus' claims and were saved in the old dispensation, then when the new dispensation started and the Spirit came they naturally would be the first to receive Him in that way. That is non-repeatable, too. In **Acts 8** we see this same truth applied to half Jews and half Gentiles, in **Acts 10** to Gentiles in Palestine, and in **Acts 19** to Gentiles outside of Palestine. They were similar to Acts 2 to show that Jews and Gentiles were now equal in the same Body, that the same thing happened to each. Each one showed the changeover from Old Testament law to New Testament grace. There had to be a definite time of change, showing the transfer had been made and those believers accepted. Still, what happened was different enough to show that it wasn't Acts 2 repeated again. Those were the only times anything even resembling Acts 2 happened in Acts, and it only happened once for each new group as the gospel spread from Jerusalem. All others received the Holy Spirit immediately at salvation.

Tongues is not proof of Spirit baptism. Many received the Holy Spirit but not tongues: 3,000 on the Day of Pentecost (Acts 2:38-41), early church believers (Acts 4:31), Samaritans (Acts 8:14-17), Paul (Acts 9:17-18), John the Baptist (Luke 1:15-16), Jesus (Luke 3:21-22; 4:1,14,18,21) and many others (Acts 4:8,31; 6:5; 7:55; 11:24; 13:9,52). Speaking in tongues is never mentioned in the leadership qualities in Titus or I Timothy. The Bible makes it clear that obedience is the proof of the Holy Spirit's indwelling, not tongues (Ephesians 5:18f).

Tongues in Acts and Corinth were the same. The same Greek word ('glossa' meaning 'tongue, to speak, language') is always used of known foreign languages and is used in both Acts (2:6-11, etc.) and Corinth (I Corinthians 14:21; 12:10). In Acts is it obvious that the listeners heard known languages spoken by those who had no previous knowledge of the language. There is no indication that what Corinth experienced was different. It is only the church at Corinth that is mentioned as using tongues, and then many corrections were needed because it was a very carnal church (I Corinthians. 3:1-3).

The purpose of tongues was to show Jews that God's judgment was on them. They were to spread God's message to Gentiles but failed. God would show He was judging them for that by bringing His word to them by Gentiles in Gentile languages. This was prophesied in Isa. 28:9-12; 33:19f; Deuteronomy 28:49; and Jeremiah 5:15. Paul said tongues fulfilled those prophecies (I Corinthians 14:21-22). When the Jews didn't heed this sign and repent, God's judgment came upon them in 70 AD when Jerusalem was destroyed. After 70 AD there is no instance of tongues being used in the early church. Signs are placed before what they are to mark, not after! Paul said (I Corinthians. 13:8-12) that tongues "will be stilled." The Greek word, 'pauo,' is in the middle voice; they will stop by themselves and not start again. History records only a very few, very isolated, very minor outbreak of tongues from Acts to the present. These groups were often heretical in some or all of their other beliefs. Obviously tongues did stop. There is nothing to indicate that they would ever begin again, for their purpose has been fulfilled. When Joel 2 talks about the Holy Spirit coming back after the Tribulation, there is no mention of tongues!

Then what about those with the gift of interpretation? First, the Greek word for this refers to someone who interprets known languages, like from Spanish to German. The use of foreign languages was to show God's judgment to the Jews present. The content of the message was God's good news, which the Jews should have been spreading. Since speaking in an unknown language would mean nothing to Gentiles present, Paul said there had to be an interpreter present when the gift was used (I Corinthians 14:26-28). This was necessary for the weak and immature Corinthian believers (14:20-22) who were ignorant of God's truth (12:13). It was to be kept to a minimum (14:6-12) because it was an inferior gift (I Corinthians. 14:4). Paul himself only used his ability to speak in unknown languages in Jewish synagogues, not Jewish services (14:39).

Applying these criteria to tongues today (known foreign language, showing God's judgment on the Jews, used only with Jews present, see as a lesser/minor gift whose use was to be kept to a minimum, etc.) shows that what is happening today is different from what happened back then.

Tongues are not a heavenly language. The Greek word makes it clear they are a KNOWN language (Acts 2:6-11; I Corinthians 14:21; 12:10). This is different than the 'groanings' of Romans 8:26 for those are clearly said to be unutterable (not able to be spoken). The "tongues of angels" (I Corinthians. 13:1) is a hyperbole (overemphasis to make a point) like "faith to move mountains." Besides, when angels spoke in the Bible, it was always in the known language of those to whom they were speaking.

Tongues are not a private prayer language. All spiritual gifts are given for the sake of others, not the one having the gift (I Corinthians 12:7, 12f; 14:19,27), that's why an interpreter had to always be present in Corinth (I Corinthians 14:26-28). Every time the gift of tongues was given in the Bible it was given to a group, not an individual. It was always used in a group, too, with no instance of private use recorded. The tongue is to be controlled by the speaker, not beyond his control (I Corinthians. 14:28-33). Plus, tongues were to be a sign to unbelievers, not believers (I Corinthians 14:22). Jesus Himself warned about praying words we don't understand (Mt 6:7). Paul said he always understood what he said when he prayed, even in tongues (I Corinthians 14:15). When asked how to pray Jesus gave the Lord's Prayer, not tongues.

Dangers of speaking in tongues today. Paul warns about Satan's ability to counterfeit this (I Corinthians 12:2-3) as he has in other religions and cults today. Tongues is said to be an inferior gift because it is self-centered (I Corinthians 14:4) and leads to emphasis being put on emotions which can lead people astray (II Corinthians 6:11-12; Rom 16:17-18). We are told to pray with understanding (I Corinthians 14:13-17) and control our spiritual gift (I Corinthians 14:28-40). God arbitrarily chooses which gifts to give to whom (I Corinthians 12:7,11,18,28). We are told to not seek any particular gift (I Corinthians 12:31; 14:1-4). Tongues speaking can become a substitute for spirituality (I Corinthians 14:26-28). Worst of all, it can produce a false security by those who put faith in it as proof that God loves and accepts them. Most who practice tongues-speaking do not believe in eternal security of salvation, so their speaking in tongues becomes their proof of acceptance by God. Our faith must be in Jesus' work on the cross, not in our ability to speak in 'tongues.' Those without the gift can feel pressured to fit in with the rest of the group.

Another danger of tongues, despite Paul saying it is the least of all gifts (1 Corinthians 14:1-25), is that it is often elevated to equal importance to what God says in the Bible. This happens with 'interpretations of tongues' and those with the 'gift of prophecy' as well. These people can be looked up to and their 'word' taken on the same par as, or even above Scripture.

That is a deception from the enemy for NOTHING is to be seen as authoritative as Scripture (Revelation 22:18-19).

I have been told by those who are more experienced in dealing with tongues spirits than I am that these demons are often 'gatekeepers' and keep other demons in. They also call others in and keep them from exiting.

5. 2 CORINTHIANS

Paul soon wrote another letter to the Corinthians, called 2 Corinthians in the New Testament. In it he warned the believers to **be aware of Satan's schemes** so they aren't tricked and defeated (2 Corinthians 2:11). The brother who was living with his father's wife and was disciplined by exclusion from church fellowship (1 Corinthians 5:1-5) evidently repented and was restored to fellowship (2 Corinthians 2:5-6). Now Paul encourages them to forgive the man and treat him with love and acceptance (2 Corinthians 2:7-10). If they don't forgive him, Paul says Satan will use that to work against them (2 Corinthians 2:11).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Many believers today are ignorant of spiritual warfare, some even deny it exists, or that believers are immune from Satan's attacks. Nothing could be further from the truth. We must be soldiers who know how to use the equipment our commander provides in order to defeat those who would destroy us. Ignorance of how Satan works plays into his hands and leads to sure misery. Learn spiritual warfare, teach it to others, and use it whenever necessary.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Paul is warning them that Satan will use their unforgiveness as an opening to attack them. One of the leading causes of demonizing is unconfessed anger. Anger includes any form of unforgiveness, bitterness, hate, jealousy, gossip, criticism, etc. Paul says these can "give the devil a foothold" (Ephesians 4:26-27). He tells the Corinthians that if they don't forgive each other Satan will use that to "outwit" them (II Corinthians 2:10-11). Jesus Himself said that those who don't forgive others will be turned over to tormenting demons to bring them to repentance (Matthew 6:14-15; 18:34). This anger includes anger toward others, parents, self, or God. There can be no removing demons who claim this access until all anger is truly confessed and put under the blood of Jesus. This is one of the first things that usually comes up when we counsel people and pray for their deliverance. Do NOT take this lightly! Don't rush through this step. Spending time praying for God to show anger and unforgiveness is time well spent. (For more information see 7. The Book of Ephesians.)

Satan blinds unbelievers so they don't see the truth of the Gospel. "And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing. The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God" (2 Corinthians 4:3-4). Satan does all he can to keep men from leaving his kingdom/army and joining God's kingdom/army.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan is really fighting a battle on three levels. There is the cosmic battle, Satan and demons battle against God and angels in the heavenlies (Daniel 10:1-14), the battle against believers on this earth (Ephesians 6:10-12) and an entirely different war against unbelievers to keep them in his kingdom and use them for its advancement (Acts 26:18). Our battle against him in this life is really just a faint reflection of the real battle which takes place in the heavenlies. Although fiction, Frank Peretti's books "This Present Darkness" and "Overcoming the Darkness" help show us what these conflicts may look like. As you battle, remember the angels are battling with you and for you, you are not alone, you are just part of

the greater cosmic conflict for control of the universe, and you are on the winning side! Never give in!

LESSON FOR TODAY: All unbelievers are children of Satan (Matthew 13:37-39; John 8:44; 1 John 3:3-10) and are in Satan's kingdom (Colossians 1:12-14). All are bound by Satan (Acts 26:18) and blinded by him (2 Corinthians 4:3-4; 3:14-15) and are under Satan's power (1 John 5:19). They belong to him (Matthew 12:22-29) and are enslaved in a world system controlled by Satan (John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; 1 John 5:19). Believers are a small minority, living in enemy-occupied territory, seeking to free some of those bound in darkness so they can find freedom in Christ. Meanwhile those who oppose us do all they can to dim our light and render us ineffective in our battle against them. That is where we find ourselves. That is our battle. We do not live in a neutral world nor are people nonaligned until they decide who they will follow. Everyone who has not committed their lives to Jesus is under the power of darkness and under judgment (John 3:16-21). Every one of them needs rescuing by us!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Since all unbelievers are in Satan's possession, does that mean that all of them are demonized? Not all have had their lives invaded to the greatest extent, but without Jesus' protection and God's power they are potentially open to demonizing to one degree or another. They still have the image of God in them which we all have, and they have a free will to use to make wise choices, and that can limit the amount of influence demons can have over them. But we must always be aware of the demonic when we witness to or counsel someone who is not a believer. That is why Paul's strong works about being 'unequally yoked' carry so much weight today (2 Corinthians 6:14-16). "Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God." This isn't just about marriage, but about business partnerships, close friendships, and the like. As believers we cannot be closely bound to those who are closely bound to demons.

LESSON FOR TODAY: If you are a believer then you have left Satan's kingdom of darkness (Ephesians 2:1-10) and deserted his army, choosing instead to join the forces of his arch rival. If you think he will take that lightly and leave you alone, that he will do nothing to retaliate and render you ineffective for God, then you are greatly mistaken (Daniel 10:10-21; Acts 13:6-12; 16:16-24; 19:11-18). He is totally committed to your destruction (Ephesians 6:10-18). That is why it is imperative to learn to fight. In addition, we still fight our old sin nature (Romans 7:14-25), so in reality we are fighting a battle on two fronts. Often they combine and make things that much harder on us!

LESSON FOR TODAY: When a blind person does not see the sun shining, that is no reflection on the brightness of the sun but rather on the inability of the person to see it. The same is true of spiritual things. Satan is the ruler of the kingdom of this world (2 Corinthians 4:4) and in authority over it (Luke 4:6). Naturally he wants to keep his subjects in darkness, which he does. In addition, our sin nature keeps us from coming to God for salvation. It is only as His Spirit works in us to draw us to Him that we come (John 6:37-46; 15:16, 19; Ephesians 1:3-6, 11; Romans 9:23; Acts 16:13-15). Still, man has a free will to choose or reject salvation (1 Timothy 2:4; 2 Peter 3:9; Acts 2:21; John 3:14-16; Exodus 8:15, 32). Somehow, even though our brains are not great enough to understand how it can be, both are true (John 6:37, 44, 47; Romans 9:1-23). It should not bother us that there are some things about God and His working that we are unable to understand for He is God (Daniel 4:35; Isaiah 55:8; Romans 11:34; 9:14-16; Isaiah 40:13, 2 Corinthians 2:16). Both are true, and when we get to heaven we will see

how that can be (1 Corinthians 13:12). Our purpose is not to reconcile the two, for they are mutually exclusive, two truths which cannot be put together, but each must be believed by faith. What concerns us in this study is that at least part of the reason why it is necessary for God to work in someone for salvation is that Satan does all he can to blind them to the truth.

Therefore it is imperative that we pray for those who are blinded. How should we pray? Pray that God would roll back the blindness for a time so they can clearly see the claims of the Gospel and make a free will choice to accept or reject Jesus. We can't pray for God to make them believe, for God will not violate a person's free will choice, but we can pray they can unmistakably see the issues so they can make their own choice. Now having said that, we must acknowledge that sovereign God will make sure every person who ever lived understands the issues and makes his or her own choice. No one will stand before Him in judgment and say they didn't know or didn't have a chance. Everyone will acknowledge God is just in condemning them for they had a chance to turn to Him but, of their own free will choice, turned it down. This whole issue takes great wisdom and none of us can really understand all of it. What we do understand is that God is fair and just, He doesn't want anyone to go to hell, and the proof of that is that He paid for our sins voluntarily when He wouldn't have had to. His love and justice have been proven and we cannot question that. Just because we cannot understand all He understands is no reason to doubt His goodness (see note on Genesis 3:1-7, SIN ENTERS THE HUMAN RACE).

Taking thoughts captive. Paul clearly states that Christians battle an unseen enemy, Satan and his demons "For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ. And we will be ready to punish every act of disobedience, once your obedience is complete" (2 Corinthians 10:3-6). There are powers that set themselves up against God. They use thoughts which lead to sinful actions. Actions start with thoughts, so the key is to have victory over the thoughts before they develop into actions.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan can and will use thoughts inserted into our minds to control us. He will use worldly philosophies and views to get access to and control of us. The majority of demonizing consists of demons putting thoughts into a person's mind or snatching thoughts out of a person's mind. While they don't have access to our minds and thoughts to the same extent that God does, the Bible makes it clear there is some access. Jesus said this in the sower and the seed: "Satan comes and takes away the word that was sown." (Mark 4:15). David's thought to take a census was demonic (I Chronicles 21:1ff; II Samuel 24:1ff). So was Ananias & Saphira's greed (Acts 5:3) and Saul's jealousy/anger (I Samuel 16:14-23). That's why, when talking about spiritual warfare, Paul says we are to "bring every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ." (II Corinthians 10:4-5). Not only can Satan's forces put wrong thoughts into our minds, they can snatch right thoughts out of our minds (Mark 4:15) so we forget them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Feelings and emotions are fine, important and necessary. They are icing on the cake of life. They add color and enjoyment to life. God created them for this purpose. But He didn't create them to be the source of our decision-making. Our feelings should be dependent on our rational thought. When our feelings get ahead of it or away from it then trouble comes. You know in your mind that you are an OK person, yet in your emotions you fear you will be rejected. When feelings aren't founded on the truth they can easily mislead. The truth is that you are a fine person, but your emotions reject that truth and try to do the

'thinking' themselves. We need to let our mind explain reality to our emotions. We must be very, very careful not to follow our emotions when they differ from our rational thoughts. One of the greatest needs of our emotions/feelings is security. This is closely related to love so we could say the core of our heart is love/security. Love must bring security but doesn't always do so. Other factors can contribute to our security as well.

Paul's demonizing. Paul shares part of his own testimony about God's grace when he writes this letter to the Corinthians. He tells about his own personal battle with demons. "To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, 'My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness.' Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong" (2 Corinthians 12:7-10).

Clearly believers can be attacked by demons, for Paul says his battle was with a "Messenger" (literally 'angel') of Satan. But God was in control and, like with Job, allowed this only for His glory and Paul's growth. God is more concerned in making us what we need to be than giving us what we want to have - a nice, easy life.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Sometimes God has a greater purpose than casting out every demon as soon as we pray. Sometimes complete deliverance never comes, like with Paul in this passage. Paul testifies God then provides the grace needed to withstand. God wants us to learn to depend on Him (Psalm 119:59,92). Of course if the demonic opening is allowed to continue then the demonizing will continue, too (Psalm 94:12-16; 81:11-14).

LESSON FOR TODAY: God does not want us to know what Paul's 'thorn in the flesh' was, just that it was exceedingly painful and that he really wanted freedom from it. God allows different 'thorns' in each of our lives for He knows what we need to keep coming back to Him. If you haven't been healed (spiritually, emotionally or physically) that isn't because of lack of faith on your part, but because it is God's perfect will for you, your growth and your testimony.

6. ROMANS

Not long after writing to the Corinthians Paul wrote to the Romans. He had been wanting to minister in this great center of civilization for many years but God always has kept him from doing so. Eventually he arrived as a prisoner after a shipwreck, but for now he wants to let them know he won't be coming and why. Instead of speaking to them in person, again he is limited to sending a letter. But what a letter it has been for mankind! The book of Romans is a very key part of God's Word to us through the centuries. Paul's loss is our gain. As would be expected, Paul refers to demons and spiritual warfare in this great epistle several times.

Fear. Paul reminds his readers that God does not give us fear (Romans 8:15). Any fear we entertain comes from the flesh, our sin nature, the part of us that tends to sin. We had this before salvation and still have it after salvation.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Fear is one of Satan's biggest weapons. Demons are often behind it and use fear (Romans 8:15). If it takes the form of insecurity, anxiety, worry, preoccupation with problems, or whatever, it is still fear. Demons put fear of David into Saul (1 Samuel 18:10-15) and put fear and terror into Eliaphaz by gliding by his face (Job 4:15).

Anything not of faith is sin (Romans 14:23). God does not give us fear (II Timothy 1:7; Romans 8:15), so if you experience fear realize it is not from God but from Satan. This doesn't mean it is always through demonizing, for you can be attacked with fear without being demonized.

Fear takes root when we choose to focus on circumstances instead of God. Peter walking on water is a good example. When his eyes were on Jesus his faith was strong, but when he looked at the waves they grew (in his mind) to be greater than Jesus' power. Thus he started sinking. He then did the right thing, though, and put his eyes back on Jesus.

Dream with me for a minute. Suppose as a young child you had a father who loved you more than anything and constantly showed it. He was always there for you, always showing his love, enjoying you and laughing with you. Whatever you needed he was there to help and supply. How would that make you feel? How can such a relationship benefit a child as they grow up? There is something down deep inside all of us that would love to have someone we could trust, someone to take care of us, someone to always be there no matter what. Then we wouldn't need to try to be in control of things we fear. Control is a poor substitute for love and trust. It may have seemed necessary in your past but isn't necessary anymore!

Trust is the antidote to fear. *How can we understand trust, what it means and how it works? I think understanding how a family should work is the best answer. God established a family relationship to answer all those questions. He is the Father, we are the children. Do your children trust you? What do they have to do to earn your love? What do you expect of them? It's exactly the same with us and God. Jesus says we are to be like little children in order to learn faith and trust. Let your children teach you. Put yourself in their position - with a Perfect Father.*

Satan defeated by God's people. Paul reminds the struggling believers that, although it may seem like Satan is winning at the moment, it won't always be that way. "The God of peace will soon crush Satan under your feet" (Romans 16:20).

LESSON FOR TODAY: *Satan has already been defeated at the cross (Hebrews 2:14-15; Colossians 2:15; Ephesians 4:8). In the future he will be crushed and removed forever (Revelation 20:1-3, 10). Now, in the present, we have authority and power over him in Jesus' name (John 14:12; Matthew 28:18-20; Luke 9:1; 10:1, 17-19; Acts 1:8). God uses us to gain victory over Satan even today. His future fall and removal is sure. It's just a matter of time.*

7. EPHESIANS

After writing to the Corinthians and Romans, Paul headed back to Jerusalem where he was falsely arrested and kept in prison for several years. Finally he was transferred to Rome for trial. In prison at Rome Paul wrote four very important letters, his prison epistles. They are Ephesians, Colossians, Philippians and Philemon. Ephesians was written about four years after Romans.

Much spiritual warfare had taken place when Paul was in Ephesus (see Acts 19 above). It's been about seven years since those power encounters, but the warfare is still going strong. So Paul writes to encourage and help them in their spiritual warfare.

Satan's world system. Unbelievers are not only misled by demons, but actually energized and used by them to promote Satan's ungodly world system (Ephesians 2:20). Satan is called "the ruler of the kingdom of the air" and "the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient" (Ephesians 2:2), two of numerous names for Satan.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Looking at the various names of Satan help us understand his character and work better.

Abaddon, Apollyon (Rev 9:11) Abaddon is the Greek form and Apollyon is the Hebrew equivalent. These words mean 'destroyer,' 'destruction.' This title stresses his work of destruction; he works to destroy the glory of God and God's purpose with man. He further works to destroy societies and mankind.

Accuser of the Brethren (Revelation 12:10) The Greek word for "accuser" is kathgor, which refers to one who brings condemning accusations against others. In view of Job 1 and 2, this is also an attempt to malign the character of God and His plan. 2).

Beelzebul (Matthew 12:24; Mark 3:22) Three possible spellings of this word each have a different meaning: (1) Beelzebul means "lord of the dung," a name of reproach. (2) Beelzebub means "lord of the flies." Either one of these are names of reproach and of uncleanness applied to Satan, the prince of the demons and uncleanness. (3) Beelzeboul, means, "the lord of the dwelling." This would identify Satan as the god of demon possession. This spelling has the best manuscript evidence behind it.

Belial (2 Corinthians 6:15) This name means "worthless" or "hopeless ruin." The personification of worthlessness, hopeless ruin and the source of all idolatry and religion which is also hopeless or futile.

Devil (Matthew 4:1, 5, 9; Ephesians 4:27; Revelation 12:9; 20:2) "Devil" is the Greek word diabollos which means "slanderer, defamer." This accentuates his goal and work to impugn the character of God.

Dragon (Revelation 12:7) The Greek word is drakon (as in draconian) and refers to a "hideous monster, a dragon, or large serpent." This word stresses the cruel, vicious, and blood thirsty character and power of Satan.

Evil One (John 17:15; 1 John 5:9) The Greek poneros means "wicked, evil, bad, base, worthless, vicious, degenerate." It points to Satan's character as active and malignant.

False Angel of Light (2 Corinthians 11:14) One of his purposes is to make men as much like God as he can, but always without God. So, he will copy as much of God and His plan as he can, but he will always either distort, pervert, substitute or leave out those key ingredients of truth that are vital to the plan of salvation and sanctification through Christ.

Father of Lies (John 8:44) Using his network of deception through demonic forces and duped people, he promotes false doctrines in the name of God.

God of This World or Age (2 Corinthians 4:4) The fact Satan is called the god of this world (Greek, aionos, "age, course") may emphasize Satan's rulership over this final period or economy which is so marked by a growing increase in apostasy, deception, and moral decay.

Lucifer (Isa. 14:12) The Hebrew word for Lucifer (KJV translation) is literally "the shining one." This name draws our attention to his pre-fall condition and to the nature of the cause of his fall - pride.

Prince or Ruler (John 12:31) The Greek literally means, "the ruler of this world system." This points to Satan as the head and energy behind the arrangements of things as they are in the world today.

Prince of the Power of the Air (Ephesians 2:2a) This points to Satan as the head of the demonic hosts which includes all the fallen angelic beings who operate night and day in our immediate spiritual atmosphere-an atmosphere of demonic influence controlled by Satan.

Satan (Job 1:6-9; Matthew 4:10) The title "Satan" occurs 53 times in 47 verses in the Bible. The primary idea is 'adversary, one who withstands.'

Serpent (Revelation 12:9) This name for Satan looks back to Genesis 3 and the temptation in the Garden.

Tempter (Matthew 4:3; 1 Thessalonians 3:5) This title reveals him in another of his primary activities as seen from the very beginning with Eve in the Garden of Eden (Genesis 3).

God shows demons His greatness through us. "His intent was that now, through the church, the manifold wisdom of God should be made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly realms" (Ephesians 3:10). "Rulers and authorities" refer to the breakdown of Satan's organization of demonic forces (see below under Ephesians 6:10).

LESSON FOR TODAY: ALL powers are under God's authority (Ephesians 1:22), but not yet brought under His final control (Ephesians 6:12). God allows them freedom as He respects mankind's free will. He allows man the choice to follow Satan or not. We are living and building God's Kingdom of light in the middle of Satan's kingdom of darkness. Therefore they can clearly see what we are doing – they carefully watch so they can destroy our work. But by our lives, our faithfulness and Christlikeness, we proclaim God's power and greatness. Our victory over their work reminds them of their ultimate final defeat and demise. Many, however, are ignorant of this fact, so by our small victories over them now we show them of God's sovereign control and final defeat of them. Satan, the great deceiver, has deceived many of his own demons about their final defeat. Thus by our lives, and our words, we proclaim God's victory over them.

Anger as a foothold. Many verses warn about the danger of unconfessed unrighteous anger and how demons can use it to gain access to the angry person (2 Corinthians 2:10-11). "In your anger do not sin": Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry, and do not give the devil a foothold" (Ephesians 4:26-27).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Anger comes from mishandling hurt and pain. Instead of feeling the hurt we turn it into anger for revenge or control. This allows demons to use it as an opening. There is a lack of control that opens the door. Also, it is almost like a prayer for power to hate someone, and demons seek to answer that prayer. They made Saul angry at David, so much so that he tried to kill David (1 Samuel 18:10-11; 19:9-10). Paul says there is a very close connection between anger and demonizing (Ephesians 4:27).

Pain must be handled as pain, not turned into anger. You can't bury something alive and think you are getting rid of it. The hurt must be dead - faced, admitted, healed, removed, forgiven. When a person buries hurt alive it keeps poisoning everything until it is dug out and destroyed.

While there is a legitimate use for anger ('righteous indignation') most of what we face is not right. Anger is a secondary emotion, unlike fear which is a basic emotion. Wrong anger is always the result of mishandling another, deeper emotion like fear or pain. Let's take pain, first of all. When a person hits their finger with a hammer what do they do? Usually they get angry. What they feel is pain, but it comes out as anger because anger is a much easier emotion to handle than pain. When someone says something critical or threatening it hurts, but the natural response in many is to get angry. That way they don't have to face the pain – but it stays and causes more and more anger. That's where fear comes in. It's not just pain that causes anger, but fear of pain. Fear is at the root of anger in other ways as well. To seek to manage our fears we try to control our lives and circumstances (thus the control emphasis part grows). We feel that is necessary to prevent pain and other things we fear. We use anger as a control tool. The

adrenalin rush makes us feel in charge instead of a victim. We learn that people can be manipulated and controlled by our anger (or the threat of it) and we use that to control as well. This is another reason why it's important to deal with and get victory over the fears down inside. When they go the anger and control issues will become much more manageable. A person can't stop their anger as long as what causes it is still inside pushing it out. They must get the root cause out, and that is where dealing with the fear comes in. (For more information see 5. 2 Corinthians.)

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING. Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. List some of the ways Satan and demons work against believers.
2. What exactly was the 'gift of tongues' in the book of Acts?
3. What was its purpose?
4. What were some of the restrictions that Paul placed on its use?
5. Why is fear one of Satan's most powerful weapons?
6. When or where do you most struggle with fear?
7. What can a Christian do to have victory over fear?
8. What is the root cause of anger?
9. How can we have victory over anger?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

OUR GOD-GIVEN ARMOR FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE

BACKGROUND TO THE ARMOR OF GOD

Paul included his most complete account of how to win spiritual battles in his letter to the Ephesians (Ephesians 6:10-18). In light of all the warfare going on in Ephesus this is very appropriate. Writing from prison in Rome, chained to a Roman soldier who was guarding him, Paul must have looked for a way to convey what he wanted to say about spiritual warfare in terms the people would understand. While looking at his guard, he applied the pieces of equipment that Roman soldiers used to those that Christian soldiers use.

Paul knew that Roman soldiers didn't supply their own equipment, it was provided by their commander. Thus he starts by telling his audience that it is God's power and strength that gives us victory (Ephesians 6:10; Philippians 4:13; 1 John 4:4). We have the same power that raised Jesus from the grave (Ephesians 1:18-23; Hebrews 2:14-15). Our victory comes from God – He provides the equipment necessary to achieve it.

However just because equipment is provided doesn't mean Christian soldiers use theirs appropriately, or even use it at all. It is Satan's schemes (Ephesians 6:11; 2 Corinthians 2:11) that deceive and trap us, like a hunter seeking to trap an animal. Therefore it is up to us to use the power and equipment God provides – all of it ("full armor").

LESSON FOR TODAY: What makes this an even more difficult battle is that our enemy is not a physical soldier whom we can see and fight in our power, rather it is a spiritual enemy, a demonic power (Ephesians 6:12). "Rulers ... authorities ... powers ... spiritual forces" refer to various groups of demons in Satan's organization. Demons are organized according to their power like an army: generals, majors, captains, lieutenants, sergeants and privates. The generals and majors oversee large geographical areas or philosophical ideologies. Down it goes to the privates, demons with names like Lust, Greed, Pride, Fear or Self-Destruction. These are the ones we usually deal with in a personal way when we are involved in our spiritual warfare.

LESSON FOR TODAY: When a person is demonized there is a ruler (lieutenant or sergeant) who has a group of other demons (privates) under him. They set up their stronghold and each demon present is chosen for the particular focus of the work he does. Under the guidance of the ruler, they work together to accomplish the mission of the group which is always the destruction of the person they are attacking. The ultimate goal is the death of the person, but since they can't take a life they seek to make life so miserable that only death seems to hold hope of escape. Their goal is to cause the person to take their own life. Until they can get a person to that point they seek to make his witness for Jesus ineffective and his life as painful and empty as possible.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Paul says we are in a 'struggle' (Ephesians 6:12). This word refers to a fight to the death. Satan assigns demons to destroy each believer, their family and their church. We are in a life and death struggle, but often we don't realize how serious our enemy is about our destruction.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Not all problems and struggles are from Satan. While we want to know what he does so we can defeat him, we don't want to give him and his demons more credit than is due them. When he is bound man's sin nature will still lead him into sin without Satan's help (Revelation 20:1-3). That can assist u in knowing what is from demons and what is from our sin nature. If the source is our sin nature without demonic influence, than confession, submission to God, prayer, Bible reading and memory and good Christian fellowship will bring

immediate or progressive victory. If that does not happen then it is good to consider there might be something demonic involved as well.

Before listing the pieces of equipment available to us Paul wants to emphasize the importance of Christian soldiers standing firm against any attack the enemy launches at them. Three times he commands them to “stand” (Ephesians 13-14a).

LESSON FOR TODAY: We are to be alert and ready, not sitting or lying down sleeping. We shouldn't be caught off guard but must be alert. Nor should we retreat in fear or defeat. Yet the truth is that the stronger we stand the hotter the battle will get for the harder the demons will attack. The battle will never end until our Commander comes and takes us home. Our fight here will be over when we are promoted to heaven at death, or when Jesus returns, but not before.

Paul then specifically states each piece of equipment God provides for His soldiers. **“Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, 15 and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. 16 In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. 18 And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints”** (Ephesians 6:14-18).

THE HELMET OF SALVATION (Ephesians 6:17)

The helmet Roman soldiers wore was made of metal. An enemy would lift his heavy four foot long sword over his head with two hands and bring it straight down on the Roman soldier's head. The helmet was to protect his head from these attacks. Without proper protecting the damage done could be devastating!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan attacks our mind and thoughts whenever possible, for the damage done there can be tremendous. Demons seek to put thoughts of doubt, fear, confusion, lust, greed, pride or any other sin in our mind. We must know God's truth to have protection and victory. Our spiritual battles are won or lost in our minds first of all.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Often the thoughts that defeat us have been with us for many years, even since early childhood. Quite often they are thoughts others in our family struggle with as well – generational sins passed down through our ancestors (Exodus 20:4-5; 34:6-7; Deuteronomy 5:8-9). (For more information see under Old Testament, Moses (Exodus – Deuteronomy.)

LESSON FOR TODAY: The solution to victory over demonic thoughts placed into our minds is to 1) close the door that let them in by confessing as sin any thoughts you entertained that were not godly (1 John 1:9). Know in your mind that they can't defeat you. Don't let them put fear or confusion into your mind. God has given us the power and authority to command them to be gone in His name (Luke 9:1; 10:1, 17-19). Then 2) pray and take back any claim they make against you through your family line (2 Corinthians 5:17; John 1:12-13). Finally 3) whenever they knock on the door and try to return, quote Scripture to keep the truth of God's Word in your mind (Psalm 119:9-11) and to defeat them. Knowing and using God's Word, the sword of the Spirit, is key for victory (Joshua 1:8; Psalm 77:12; I Chronicles 28:9; Matthew 22:37-38; I Corinthians 2:16; Philippians 4:8). That's how Jesus defeated Satan (Matthew 4:1-11). Satan tries to plant doubts about God's word in man's mind. This is how he got Eve to sin.

She misquoted God's Word to Satan and when he added to what God said (making God seem like He was keeping something good from her) she didn't recognize the error. Satan was undermining God's Word, and he won! We must be skillful in the use of our sword to win.

When Jesus was tempted He quoted Scripture to have victory over Satan's temptations. Paul says our only offensive weapon is the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God. Psalm 119:9,11 tell us that it's through God's Word that we have victory. When you have these thoughts and attacks use Scripture to have victory. Ask God to give you some verses that will help against these things, write them down and memorize them. Say them over and over when these thoughts attack you. That is the only way to victory, and God guarantees it will work!

BREASTPLATE of RIGHTEOUSNESS (Ephesians 6:14)

The breastplate was made of small pieces of metal or leather fastened together so they would move and bend but so no arrow, spear or sword could go through them. It was important for it covered the heart and other vital organs. If an enemy soldier could inflict a serious wound to the upper body he would be victorious. In hand to hand combat the enemy would grab the Roman soldier's arm to pull him close and with his sword in try to stab him in the chest or stomach.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Suppose a soldier didn't bother putting on his breastplate some morning? Maybe it was too hot or too heavy, or maybe he was in a hurry or just lazy. What would happen? That's what happens to us when we don't put on our breastplate. Paul calls it the "breastplate of righteousness" because it refers to our holiness. We are holy because Jesus paid for our sins on the cross, but then we must strive to live a life free from personal sin as well. If we allow sin in our life our breastplate will have openings through which our enemy can attack and destroy us.

Demonizing happens because there is a sin that opens the door for demons to enter. The most common avenue to demonic entrance is through a family line. One person opens themselves to demonic influence and the demons claim them and all they have, including children. Then the same traits and influences pass on to the children and their children (for more information see Old Testament, 3. Moses (Exodus – Deuteronomy). Occult and Satanic involvement in demonic activities, drugs, acid rock music, Ouija boards, etc. is another opening. Cult involvement will also open the door for them. Involvement of a family member in a 'secret society' such as the Masons is an open invitation to demonizing. The Bible says that when two people have sex the two become one flesh and that allows demons to claim the other person. Abuse of any kind or any form of trauma, especially when young, open one to the demonic. Strong soul ties with someone who is demonized can cause an opening. Being unwanted when in the womb or young is a definite opening. These are some of the main avenues demons use to gain entrance and attack people.

LESSON FOR TODAY: If you have any of these openings in your life pray to have them removed. It's like opening a door and allowing someone to enter a room, then realize you shouldn't have done that. You need to close the door so no one else enters, but you also need to command those who already have entered to leave. Confessing the sin and taking back the access closes the door. Rebuking and commanding them to be gone cleans the room. The solution for sin openings is to 1) ask God to show you any sin in your life (Psalm 139:23-24), then 2) confess the sin and close the door that let the demon(s) in (1 John 1:9). You must also 3) command any demons working against you or your family to be gone, using the authority we

have in Jesus' name and power ((John 14:12; Matthew 28:18-20; Luke 9:1; 10:1, 17-19; Acts 1:8).

Then when you notice any kind of spiritual attack you defeat it by quoting scripture. When Jesus was tempted He quoted Scripture to have victory over Satan's temptations. Paul says our only offensive weapon is the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God. Psalm 119:9,11 tell us that it's through God's Word that we have victory. When you have these thoughts and attacks, use Scripture to have victory. Ask God to give you some verses that will help against these thing. Write them down and memorize them. Say them over and over when these thoughts attack you. That is the only way to victory, and God guarantees it will work!

BELT of TRUTH (Ephesians 6:14)

The belt a Roman soldier wore was an important piece of equipment for it held the weapons and equipment which he carried with him. It also held his clothing out of the way so he wouldn't stumble and fall when moving or fighting. In cool weather a heavy cloak was worn and it was easy to get tangled up in it if there wasn't a belt to hold it out of the way.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Paul equates this with knowing God's truth which keeps us from stumbling and falling spiritually. Satan would do anything he can to trip us up with his lies and deceptions (John 8:44). His demons put thoughts in our mind that we'll never have victory but will always be defeated, that God doesn't care about us because our sin is so great, that what we are going through is our own fault and we deserve to suffer, that Jesus isn't God, that we are inferior to others and a failure, or any lie that can trip us up. Whenever we get a thought that doesn't line up with God's truth as revealed in His Word, a thought that Jesus wouldn't have entertained, make sure you reject it as well.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The way to have victory over Satan's lies and deceptions is by knowing God's truth. 1) Ask God to show you any lies you believe, then 2) confess them as sin and replace them with the truth of God's Word. Find Scripture passages and write them down to carry with you and use them when attacked. Make sure 3) you take back any access any demons have claimed through these lies. Also 4) spend time each day reading and learning God's Word, including marking and memorizing passages which speak to you.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God's truth is the basis for all we are and have. We are God's people under His care and protection. Nothing can harm us. Not even curses that are knowingly or unknowingly placed against us. (For more information see the Life of Jesus, 5. GADARENES DEMONIAC).

SANDALS of PEACE (Ephesians 6:15)

The Romans needed sturdy sandals on their feet for marching and fighting. They would walk in sand, on sharp rocks, and through streams of slippery stones. They could be attacked at any moment so they needed something that would help them stand firm no matter where they found themselves. Their enemy would pick a location to fight that was advantageous for them but not for the Romans. They would do anything to gain an unfair advantage!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Our enemy still does the same thing to us today. He does anything he can to gain even the slightest advantage over the Christian. He tries to choose the footing that will give him victory and take away our peace. When he gets us on his ground he

presses the attack. We can be on his ground when something that happened at that place in the past opened the door to demonic control.

Some event may have happened on the land or in the home or room where you live. It could be a violent act, an occult activity, a curse, a dedicating of the property to the powers of darkness or similar acts. Sometimes when we go into a certain neighborhood or home there is a 'sense' of evil, a discomfort in our spirit. In a store that sells New Age materials you may 'feel' different in your spirit, a discomfort. This is the explanation for supernatural apparitions that happen in 'haunted' homes – demonic activity may be present. Some countries and even continents are in extra darkness and bondage and it can be sensed by believers. The message we get is from God's Holy Spirit Who is warning us against the evil around us.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Our solution is 1) to pray, taking back any access the enemy may claim to the property and asserting our right as children of God to claim and use it. Put any other claims under the blood of Jesus and dedicate it to Him for His honor and glory. Then 2) claim the place for Jesus and dedicate it to Him alone. A sign, picture or cross on the wall can be a good visual reminder to all of the ownership of the property by the Lord Jesus Christ.

Pray, even anoint your house and property, inside and out. Walk around your boundaries praying out loud, claiming your property for God and forbidding any demons to have any access to it. Dedicate it to God and invite His presence through all of it. Take back any access any demons may claim to the property and put that access under the blood of Jesus. Break it in Jesus' name. Ask God to put an angelic hedge of protection around it. Do the same in all the rooms of the house, especially the basement (if you have one). Anoint each room with oil by dipping your finger in the oil and putting a cross on the door, walls, etc. Pray as you did when you walked around the property. If there is one particular part of the house that seems to have demonic presence in a specially strong way, put a night light there so there is always light in to room. You could do that to all the rooms. Demons hate light, and they hate hearing Jesus praised, so you can play praise music in various places 24 hours a day. It can be real soft – they will hear it!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Another way we can find ourselves having poor footing and a harder time standing against Satan, is when we have something in our possession that gives demons access to the place where we are. When the Jews took possession of Canaan under Joshua they were told to not keep any of the objects they captured. Even animals and children were to be destroyed. They had been dedicated to Satan and were claimed by him. Those who used these things would be opening themselves up to the demonic powers to whom they had been dedicated. That's why Paul had the people in Ephesus burn all their occult books (Acts 19:17-20). Today we must watch for things like literature from other cults and religions, Ouija boards and other occult paraphernalia, pagan objects from primitive cultures, objects from Masonic or other secret societies, some Native American artifacts or the like. Pornography, drug or alcoholic supplies, music with a black or evil dimension and similar items can also be used as points of entry by demons.

LESSON FOR TODAY: The solution is 1) to remove and destroy such objects as God convicts you as being openings for demonic access. Ask for forgiveness for having them, cleanse the room from their presence, 2) take back any access the enemy may claim and dedicate the space as well as yourself to Jesus. Ask Him to reveal to you anything else that may need to be dealt with.

When a room or object is under the control of an evil spirit for whatever reason they claim, painting crosses by dipping a finger in oil and making them on a wall claims the place for Jesus. Playing Christian music and leaving a small light on also are offensive to the forces of

darkness. Of course praying and quoting scripture while making the crosses is important, too. I know I, as a Christian, have great power in blessing people, especially my own family and other Christians. 'God bless you' is more than a slang or shallow comment. There's real power in it when one means it that way. It's a privilege I use and repeat often to people. Distance doesn't seem to affect it at all. Of course there is something even more special about touching a person when I pray or ask God to bless them, but when far away from them God still answers the prayer. The power is in God who is everywhere (omnipresent). Satan and demons are limited to one place at a time so they are at a distinct disadvantage in this, too.

SHIELD of FAITH (Ephesians 6:16)

The equipment mentioned so far (helmet, breastplate, belt, sandals) form an inner wall of defense. There is an outer wall of defense as well – a large shield every Roman soldier carried. He would hold this in front of him for outer protection. Other soldiers would stand or walk alongside him as they all held up their shields forming a wall in front of them, sometimes above them as well. When enemies would throw balls of burning tar at the Romans this outer wall of defense would provide much-needed protection for they would be severely wounded or killed if the hot tar hit them. At least they would be out of the battle for quite some time.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Paul says this is like our faith – our outer wall of protection. Having faith in God's sovereign control no matter what is happening is key to our spiritual health. The greater your faith the larger your shield, the smaller your faith the smaller your shield. People with little faith get hit by whatever Satan throws at them: fear, guilt, greed, pride, anger, lust.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan attacks us through his demons even if don't open the door through sin. He attacks everyone in God's army, especially leaders like pastors and missionaries. They don't have to have done anything to open a door – just standing with Jesus will draw attacks because Satan is committed to opposing God's kingdom in any and every way he can. Satan can't attack Jesus directly so he takes his hate and anger out on God's children. That's why the Jews have experienced such persecution through the years. While we were in Satan's army, or even when we were neutral and ineffective for God, demons didn't need to waste time and effort on us. But when we become committed to serving Jesus and building His Kingdom we find we have spiritual enemies sworn to do anything they can to destroy us. Sometimes these attacks are direct, other times they take a more indirect approach. Our marriage, finances, children or health may be attacked to discourage us and cause us to cease to actively participate in the cause of Christ. This is what happened to Job. These attacks can also take the form of opposition from other people. There may be a person who does what he can to make life difficult for you. Satan attacked Job because he was effective in his faith and Satan wanted to stop that. That seems to be the cause of Paul's demonic 'thorn in the flesh' attack as well (2 Corinthians 12).

LESSON FOR TODAY: How can we tell what is a normal problem of the flesh or life in a fallen world from what is an attack of the enemy? If it brings a long, ongoing battle, and especially if you are having trouble having victory over it, you should seek for deeper causes. Or if it is a very new, very sudden attack that threatens to overwhelm and defeat you that can be a sign of demonic attack. If it is something large that comes from nowhere, like a gigantic wave that threatens to wash you away, then suspect spiritual causes as well.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Pray for a hedge of protection around yourself, your property and your family, as Job did (Job 1:45, 10-11). Turn to God's Word for guidance: "God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble. Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he

will flee from you. Come near to God and He will come near to you” James 4:6-8. “All things work together for the good of those who love God” Romans 8:28. “There is no testing taken you but such as is common to man. God will not allow you to be tested beyond what you can bear, but with the testing will make a way of escape so you can bear it” I Corinthians 10:13).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Our defense against these attacks of Satan when sin isn’t involved is for us to 1) keep our faith strong, keep our eyes on Jesus only (Matthew 14:28-31). Also, 2) pray for His protection for you, your family and your church (Job 1:4-5).

SWORD of the SPIRIT - WORD OF GOD (Ephesians 6:17)

So far all the equipment Paul has mentioned has been defensive. Its purpose is to protect the soldier from enemy attack. However none of it will bring victory, none will defeat an enemy. There is no defensive equipment to protect their backs so retreat was not possible. They could only move forward. They needed an offensive weapon to do that. For the Romans that was their short sword. It is with skillful use of it that the Romans conquered their world.

LESSON FOR TODAY: Paul saw this piece of equipment as so important that he makes sure we know what it stands for – he clearly identifies it as the Word of God (Ephesians 6:17). God’s Word is our only way to defeat Satan. Jesus quoted the Bible when attacked (Matthew 4:1-11). The Word is God’s sword for us: “For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.” (Hebrews 4:12-13) Make sure you know the Bible and memorize verses so you can quote them when you need them. Quoting Scripture resets our mind to the truth, lets our mind explain reality to our emotions and is God’s authority to Satan and demons for it is much more powerful than our words! It is the truth that brings freedom (John 8:32).



USE THE WORD OF GOD

Knowing and using God's Word, the sword of the Spirit, is key for victory in our daily struggles (Joshua 1:8; Psalm 77:12; I Chronicles 28:9; Matthew 22:37-38; I Corinthians 2:16; Philippians 4:8). That's how Jesus defeated Satan (Matthew 4:1-11). Satan tries to plant doubts about God's word in man's mind. That is how he got to Eve. She misquoted God's Word to Satan and when he added to God's Word (making God seem like He was keeping something good from her) she didn't pick it up. Satan was undermining God's Word, and he won! We must be skillful in the use of our sword for Satan can deceitfully twist and misquote God's truth so as to use it for his benefit.

Here are some good verses to memorize to help you through life.

THE BIBLE, GOD'S WORD The Word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. Hebrews 4:12

GOD'S TRUTH FREES "If you hold to my teaching, you are really My disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." John 8:32

SUBMIT TO GOD, RESIST SATAN God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble. Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Come near to God and He will come near to you. James 4:6-8

GOD IS GREATER THAN SATAN The One who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. I John 4:4

GOD WILL MEET ALL OUR NEEDS My God will meet all your needs according to His glorious riches in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:19

RENEW YOUR MIND WITH CHRIST Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is -- His good, pleasing and perfect will. Romans 12:2

POWER OF PRAYER The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective. James 5:16

AUTHORITY OVER DEMONS Jesus replied: "I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you." Luke 10:18-19

RESISTING SATAN Jesus turned and said to Peter, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men." Matthew 16:23

SIN AS OPENINGS TO DEMONIZING Search me, O God, and know my heart; test me and know my anxious thoughts. See if there is any offensive way in me and lead me in the way everlasting. Psalm 139:23-24

CURSES Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree." Galatians 3:13

ANCESTRAL & CHILDHOOD OPENINGS Therefore if anyone is in Christ, He is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come! II Corinthians 5:17

OCCULT OPENINGS Do not turn to mediums or seek out spiritists, for you will be defiled by them. I am the LORD your God. Leviticus 19:31

NEW AGE OPENINGS Such men (who preach a Jesus other than the Jesus I preached) are false prophets, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. II Corinthians 11:13-15

DELIVERANCE FROM DEMONIZING Dear friends, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are from God ... This is how you can recognize the Spirit of God: Every spirit that acknowledges that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God. I John 4:1-2

PROMISES SPECIFICALLY RELATED TO SPIRITUAL WARFARE:

Our Adversaries Will Be Defeated: Deuteronomy 32:43; Philippians 1:28; Deuteronomy 33:27

Victory is Promised: I Corinthians 15:57; I Chronicles 29:11; Proverbs 21:31; I John 5:4, 18; Rev. 12:11; 15:2; Romans 8:37; II Corinthians 2:14; John 16:33

God Promises To Fight For Us: I Samuel 14:47; Jeremiah 1:8

No Weapon Formed Against The Believer Can Prosper: Isaiah 54:17

Jesus Is Constantly Praying & Interceding On Our Behalf: I John 2:1; Hebrews 7:25

God Is Always With Us: Matthew 28:20; Hebrews 13:5; Matthew 18:20; John 14:16, 21; Revelation 3:20

Confession Means Cleansing & Forgiveness: I John 1:8-9; Thessalonians 5:23-24; I Timothy 4:5; Luke 11:13; II Timothy 2:21; Jude 1; Romans 8:33-39; Titus 3:4-5

God Hears & Answers Prayer: Matthew 7:7; Luke 11:9; Jeremiah 33:3

We will never Be Separated From God: Romans 8:35-39; John 10:27-29; 3:36; 5:24

God Will Meet All Your Needs: Philippians 4:19; Psalm 84:11; Romans 8:32; I Samuel 12:24

There Is No Need To Worry: Matthew 6:25,34; I Peter 5:7; Isaiah 40:11; Matthew 5:38-39; Psalm 37:1-9; Jude 24

God Promises His Care & Protection: Deuteronomy 33:27; Genesis 17:1; Jeremiah 23:24; 32:7

Everything Will Work Out Right In the End: Romans 8:28

You Won't Ever Face Anything You Can't Handle With God's Help: I Corinthians 10:13

Peace Is Available No Matter What: John 14:27; Romans 5:1; Colossians 1:20; Isaiah 26:3; Philippians 4:6-7; Matthew 11:28-30; II Timothy 1:7

Trials Are Allowed To Bring Spiritual Growth: Psalm 119:67,71,75; 94:12; Isa. 48:10; Rom. 5:3

The Believer Has Nothing To Fear: Proverbs 3:25; Isaiah 14:3; Psalm 34:4; Joshua 1:9; 10:8; 23:9-11; Leviticus 26:8; Exodus 14:13; I Samuel 17:45-47; II Samuel 22:33-35,40-41

We Are Assured Of Eventual Triumph Over Our Adversaries: Acts 2:39

Victory Is Guaranteed Us: I Corinthians 15:57; Romans 8:37; I Chronicles 29:11; I John 5:4, 18; II Chronicles 32:8; Revelation 3:5; 21:7

God Will Help Us Carry Our Burdens: Nehemiah 4:10; Matthew 11:30; Psalm 55:22

God Promises Comfort: Psalm 23:4; Lamentations 3:22-23; Matthew 5:4; 11:28-30; John 14:16, 18; John 14:16, 18; Romans 15:4; II Corinthians 1:3-4; II Thessalonians 2:16-17

God Will Give Us Courage: Proverbs 38:1; I Corinthians 16:13; II Timothy 1:7

Guidance Is Promised: Psalm 32:8; Isaiah 30:21; 58:11; Luke 1:79; John 15:13

God Will Help In Your Sorrow: Proverbs 10:22; Isaiah 53:4; John 16:22; II Corinthians 6:10; I Thessalonians 4:13; Revelation 21:4

Wisdom Is Promised Those Who Ask: James 1:5; 3:15-17; Luke 16:8; 21:15; I Cor. 2:5; 3:19

Rejecting Wrong Thoughts: II Corinthians 10:5; Psalm 139:23-24; 141:3-4; Isaiah 26:3-4; Romans 12:2; Ephesians 4:22-24; Philippians 3:18-21

Power of the Word of God: Ephesians 6:17; Hebrews 4:12; Isaiah 55:11; 59:21; Psalm 119:81, 105, 111-112; Proverbs 30:5; Lamentations 2:17; 3:37; Matthew 24:35; John 5:24; 8:51; 15:7; Rom. 10:17

God's Promise of Angelic Intervention: II Kings 6:17; Psalm 34:6-7; 91:11; Daniel 6:22; 10:5-14; Acts 12:15

PRAYER (Ephesians 6:18)

After having described the equipment God provides for His people, Paul talks about prayer. Any soldier must be in direct communication with those he serves in order to be of use to them. Paul connects the section about our armor with the section on prayer by the use of “and” showing they go together (Ephesians 6:18).

LESSON FOR TODAY: The importance of a good, solid prayer life cannot be overemphasized (Matthew 7:7; Luke 11:9; Jeremiah 33:3). Fasting can be an important part of prayer as well when God directs it.

LESSON FOR TODAY: God does promise ultimate victory for His people, not always immediately in this life but enough for now and the rest in the future (1 Corinthians 15:57; 2 Corinthians 2:14; 1 John 5:5).

PRAYER OF THE ARMOR OF GOD Heavenly Father, I desire to be obedient by being strong in the Lord and the power of Your might. I see that this is Your will and purpose for me. I recognize that it is essential to put on the armor that You have provided, and I do so now with gratitude and praise that You have provided all I need to stand in victory against Satan and his kingdom. Grant me wisdom to discern the tactics and sneakiness of Satan's strategy against me. I delight to take the armor You have provided and by faith to put it on as effective spiritual protection against the spiritual forces of darkness present in the world today.

I confidently take the **belt of truth** that You offer me. I take Him who is the truth as my strength and protection. I reject Satan's lies and deceiving ways which seek to gain advantage against me. Grant me discernment and wisdom to recognize the subtle and sneaky methods in which Satan seeks to cause me to accept his lies as truth. I desire to believe only the truth, to live the truth, to speak the truth, and to know the truth. I worship and praise You that You lead me only in the ways of truth. Thank You that Satan cannot stand against the truth.

Thank You for the **breastplate of righteousness** which you offer me. I eagerly accept it and put it on as my protection. Thank you for reminding me again that all of my righteousness comes from You. I embrace that righteousness which is mine by faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. It is His righteousness that is mine through justification. I reject and repudiate all trust in my own righteousness which is as filthy rags. I ask You to cleanse me of all the times I have counted my own goodness as being acceptable before You. I bring the righteousness of my Lord directly against all of Satan's workings against me. I express my desire to walk in righteousness before God today. By faith I appropriate the righteousness of Christ and invite Him to walk in His holiness in my life today that I might experience His righteousness in total context of ordinary living. I count upon the righteousness of my Lord to be my protection. I know that Satan must retreat from before God's righteousness.

Thank You, Lord, for the **sandals of peace** You have provided. I desire that my feet should stand on the solid rock of the peace that You have provided. I claim the peace with God which is mine through justification. I desire the peace of God which touches my emotions and feelings through prayer and sanctification (Philippians 4:6). Thank You that as I walk in obedience to You the God of peace promises to walk with me (Philippians 4:9), I thank you that as the God of peace You are putting Satan under my feet (Romans 16:20). I will share this good news of peace with all others that Your Spirit will bring into my life today. Thank you that You have not given me a spirit of fear but of love and power and a sound mind (II Timothy 1:7). Thank you that Satan cannot stand against Your peace.

Eagerly, Lord, I lift up the **shield of faith** against all the blazing darts that Satan and his hosts fire at me. I recognize that You are my shield and that in Your incarnation and crucifixion You took the arrows of Satan which I deserved. By faith I count upon You to shield me from above and beneath; on my right and my left; in front of me and behind me, that I might be protected, walled in, and encapsulated by You that Satan may gain no way to hurt me or keep me from fulfilling Your will today.

I am willing that any fiery darts of Satan You wish to touch me should do so, but I shall look upon them as refining fires permitted in Your providence and by Your love for my refining and Your glory. Thank You, Lord, that You are a complete and perfect shield and that Satan cannot touch me apart from Your sovereign purpose.

I recognize that my mind is a particular target of Satan's deceiving ways. I take from You the **helmet of salvation**. I cover my mind and my thoughts with Your salvation. I recognize that the Lord Jesus Christ is my salvation. I fill my head with Him. I invite His mind to be in me.

Let me think His thoughts, feel His love and compassion, and discern His will and leading in all things. Let my mind be occupied with the continuing, daily, saving work of my Lord in and through my life. May You meet and defeat all Satanic thoughts in my mind.

With joy I take hold upon the **sword of the Spirit**, which is the Word of God. I affirm that Your Word is the trustworthy, infallible Word of God. I choose to believe it and to live in its truth and power. Grant me the love for Your Word which comes from the Holy Spirit. Forgive and cleanse me from the sin of neglecting Your Word. Create in me a hunger and thirst to study and know Your Word. Enable me to memorize it and to meditate upon its truth. Grant me proficient recall and skill in using Your Word against all of Satan's subtle attacks against me, even as my Lord Jesus Christ used the Word against Satan. Enable me to use Your Word not only to defend me from Satan, but also to claim its promises and to wield the sword strong against Satan to defeat him, to take away from him ground he claims, and to win great victories God through Your Word. Thank You that Satan must retreat from Your Word applied against him.

Thank You, dear Lord, for prayer. Help me to keep this armor well-oiled with prayer. I desire to pray at all times with depth and intensity as the Holy Spirit leads me. I trust the Holy Spirit to enable me and to intercede for me and through me. Grant me great supplication and burden for others in God's family of blood-washed saints. Enable me to see their needs and to assist them through prayer as the enemy attacks them. All of these petitions, intercessions, and words of praise I offer up before the true and living God in the name and worthy merit of my Lord Jesus Christ. Amen. (Adapted from "Prayers for Spiritual Warfare" by Phillip Kayser and Mark Bubek)

LESSON FOR TODAY: Did the Ephesians use their armor and have victory in their spiritual warfare? Yes and no. Yes, for they didn't fall back into the sins that opened them to demonizing in the past. But also no, for Satan changed his tactics and attacked from within the church instead and this was much more successful. Deceptions and lies from false teachers brought confusion and often disunity among the believers. Satan still attacks from without and within today. It is the subtle attacks within we must be aware of for they often take us by surprise. That makes them more dangerous and deadly. We must know God's Word thoroughly and apply it to all things in life to avoid being deceived.

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING. Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. Describe the way demons are organized.
2. Who provides our armor for spiritual warfare? What is our responsibility concerning it?
3. What is the helmet of truth and why do we need it?
4. What is the breastplate of righteousness and why do we need it?
5. What is the belt of truth and why do we need it?
6. What are the sandals of peace and why do we need them?
7. What is the shield of faith and why do we need it?
8. What is the sword of the Spirit and why do we need it?
9. What are some special Bible verses that help you have victory in your life?
10. What is the place of prayer in spiritual warfare?
11. Which piece of equipment is your weakest? What can you do to use it better?

When you have completed this you can move on to the next section.

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

8. COLOSSIANS

Colossians is very similar to Ephesians. Both letters were written at the same time, to the same geographical area and contain the same truths. Colossians does not have the section on armor that Ephesians has (Ephesians 6:10-18) because it is written to teach truth and counter the heresy of Gnosticism. Paul does strongly affirm Jesus' sovereign control over everything in heaven and earth, for He created and is in authority over angels and demons as well as everything else (Colossians 1:15-20). Those influenced by Gnosticism felt Jesus was inferior to angels and demons, so Paul makes sure he corrects this misconception. Satan uses deception to promote these kinds of false philosophies (Colossians 2:8). When the believers in Colossae start believing these untruths they start finding themselves in bondage again (Colossians 2:8).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan is still more successful through deception and lies than direct attack (John 8:44). Direct attack makes the church stronger, like in China and third world countries today. Deceptions and partial truths weaken the church, like is often true in the USA and Europe today. We must be convinced that Jesus is totally God (Colossians 2:9) and has all wisdom and knowledge (Colossians 2:3).

The other two letters written from Paul's first Roman imprisonment, Philemon and Philippians, don't deal with the issue of spiritual warfare in a direct, obvious way.

9. 1 TIMOTHY

Two years after writing his letters from prison, after he was released and started traveling again, Paul wrote a letter to Timothy called 1 Timothy in our Bibles. Timothy was in Ephesus, that important center of the early church, and was struggling with difficulties in pastoring and leading the people. His youth and shyness, combined with the pushiness of some people, made leading the church difficult for him.

Church discipline. He refers to two people living in unrepentant sin who have been disciplined by being denied church fellowship (1 Timothy 1:18-20). This is similar to the event in Corinthians (1 Corinthians 5:1-5). The purpose in denying them Christian fellowship and allowing them to be open to the attacks of the world is to remind them of what they had when following Jesus so they will repent and turn from their sin. Eternal salvation isn't in view here, but fellowship with God and other Christians in this life is the issue.

Satan tempts with pride. When Paul gives Timothy guidance about whom to choose for church leadership one of the important traits is that the person not be a new believer, "or he may become conceited and fall under the same judgment as the devil" (1 Timothy 3:6). "Conceited" is the Greek word *tuphoo*, literally "to raise a smoke." It refers to someone who is self-centered and focused on themselves. Satan fell because of pride (Isaiah 14, Ezekiel 28) and it is one of his most successful tools today. Those who are given positions of authority or leadership in church are more susceptible to pride, so Paul warns that anyone who isn't spiritually mature must not be put in positions where they may be tempted to be proud.

Paul continues on to say "He must also have a good reputation with outsiders, so that he will not fall into disgrace and into the devil's trap" (1 Timothy 3:7). Satan has traps. His plan is to deceive us so destruction comes. Lust for Bathsheba by David was used by Satan to bring destruction to David (1 Samuel 11 – 24).

Satan and demons use deception. Paul also warns Timothy that demons have deceptive 'spiritual' teachings that seem right to those who aren't spiritually attuned. The

purpose is to lead them to abandon the faith (1 Timothy 4:1). Both 1 and 2 Timothy have much to say about false teachers and false teaching. Clearly Satan is behind it all, as he is today..

If one isn't following God, then they are following Satan. If believers have any sin in their lives, demons will somehow make sure others become aware of it and use it to slander the person and the name of Jesus (1 Timothy 5:14). When we don't follow God we are following Satan and his forces, whether we realize it or not (1 Timothy 5:15). There is no neutral ground, no middle territory. It is either one or the other.

10. 2 TIMOTHY

A couple of years later, about 64 AD, Paul wrote his second and last letter to Timothy. It was the last inspired correspondence he ever wrote. It was Paul's final words to the one who was closer to him than any other human being, his son in the faith Timothy. In it he warns Timothy of the traps Satan and demons use to capture people and trick them into doing his will (2 Timothy 2:26). Most would not willingly do so, but anyone not doing God's will is actually following and serving Satan (1 Timothy 5:15).

C. PETER'S WRITINGS (Epistles)

1. 1 PETER

Although he wrote most of the letters in the New Testament, Paul isn't the only one whose correspondence was inspired and kept for our benefit in God's Word. Peter wrote two epistles which contain good advice about spiritual warfare. The first was written in 63 AD, about the same time Paul was writing his letters to Timothy.

Satan used Peter to tempt Jesus to avoid the cross (Matthew 16:23; Mark 8:33). Satan asked God for permission to "sift Peter as wheat" (Luke 22:31) by leading him to deny he knew Jesus so he would feel tremendous guilt and remorse. But Jesus said He prayed for Peter, that his faith wouldn't fail and that he could strengthen his fellow Christians (Luke 22:32).

Peter certainly knew from firsthand experience that the battle with Satan and his demons was real! Therefore he knew what he was talking about when he wrote: "Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same kind of sufferings. And the God of all grace, who called you to his eternal glory in Christ, after you have suffered a little while, will himself restore you and make you strong, firm and steadfast. To him be the power for ever and ever. Amen" (1 Peter 5:8-11).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Peter challenges his readers to be "self-controlled" (sober, paying attention) and "alert" (awake, watchful), both strong commands to prepare themselves for the sure-to-come battle with Satan. Satan is like a "roaring lion" looking for anyone he can "devour" (assault, destroy, make ineffective by severing the vital union between us and God). As with Peter (Luke 22:31-32), Satan tries to destroy our faith so we will be open to fear, sin and discouragement. Therefore we are commanded to "resist him" and remain "firm and steadfast" in faith. God uses these very attacks to strengthen our faith and help us grow (1

Peter 5:10). He does not stop the attacks or make us immune to them, but He provides strength so we can stand up against them (1 Corinthians 0:13).

2. 2 PETER

A year later Peter wrote what seems to be a strange statement. He says God did not spare the angels when they sinned but sent them to hell, putting them in gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment (2 Peter 2:4). Jude said they are kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day (Jude 6). It seems many demons are bound by God in some lower and most terrible 'hell' because they are too evil to be released so God spares the world their influence. They will be judged and condemned to hell for all eternity (Revelation 20:1-3, 10).

D. MISC WRITINGS (Epistles)

1. JAMES

Another writer, besides Peter and Paul, was James, the half-brother of Jesus (same mother, different father). Chronologically, his was the first inspired book written in the New Testament and was addressed to Jewish Christians. James taught them about living for God, and spiritual warfare was/is an important part of that life.

James' words are quite interesting because they are the first written words about spiritual warfare in the New Testament. He starts talking about sin which comes from within man (James 4:1-3) then the influence of the world from without (James 4:4). He affirms God's great grace to those who are humble (James 4:5-6). Following this he gives three strong commands and two great promises. Command one is to submit to God (James 4:7), total and complete surrender to the Lordship of Jesus Christ (Romans 12:1-2). There can be no victory in the Christian life without this first requirement. This means that all sin must be confessed (1 John 1:9; James 5:13-16).

Following this comes the second command: resist the devil (James 4:7). "Resist" means to not give in, compromise or yield but to stand fast. It has the idea of a difficult struggle but remaining firm. How do we resist him? The same way Jesus did – we quote Scripture (Matthew 4:1-11; Luke 4:1-13) and we use God's armor (Ephesians 6:10-18).

LESSON FOR TODAY: When we resist the enemy, God promises he will flee (James 4:7). That is God's first promise to us in this passage. "Resist the devil, and he will flee from you" (James 4:7). James says he "will" flee – he has to because God makes him. Sometimes God drives him away instantaneously, other times it is more gradual as the person learns and grows in their faith. That is why continued counseling after spiritual warfare deliverance is so important. Demons may fight, stall and do what they can to resist, but ultimately they must obey when God sends them away. The only exception is if God allows them to stay because He wants to use them for our growth and His glory, like with Paul's "thorn in the flesh" (2 Corinthians 12:7-10). When God doesn't remove the source of the demonizing He promises to give special grace so we can hold up under it. It becomes His chosen tool to make us more like Jesus.

Peter concludes this passage with another command and promise. “Draw near to God” (James 4:8) means to keep Him and His greatness in the center of our focus. When we do this His promise is “He will draw near to you” (James 4:8). Don’t sit back and expect Him to come wait on you, move in His direction and He will move in yours!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Don’t focus on Satan or demons, nor let them keep your main emphasis from being on God and Jesus (Philippians 4:8-9). Too many live in fear of what demons are doing or may do. That gives them the power, attention and worship on which they thrive. We can’t ignore them to the extent we let them do anything they want, but we must make sure God is always foremost in our thoughts and motives. When we move towards God He moves more than half way to move towards us.

2. HEBREWS

Writing 20 years after James, soon after Paul and Peter wrote their last epistles, the writer of Hebrews states that Satan holds the power of death, but that Jesus became a man so that he could destroy Satan and the consequences of death which sin brings (Hebrews 2:14-15). God has conquered death and Jesus is forever victorious over it (1 Corinthians 15).

3. JUDE

Writing about 5 or 6 years after Hebrews and 2 Peter, Jude (Jude 6) writes something similar to what Peter had written (see 2 Peter 2:4 above) about some demons even now being chained awaiting judgment.

A few verses later, when talking about the danger of slandering others, Jude uses the archangel Michael as an example for he did not bring a slanderous accusation against Satan when he was disputing him for Moses’ body. Instead he said, “the Lord rebuke you” (Jude 8-9).

LESSON FOR TODAY: While we aren’t to fear demons, we must have a healthy respect for their power which is greater than ours. Especially the higher ranking demons who have power to cause much destruction. Our warfare against them must be done carefully, preferably with others praying for us, and always in an attitude of total dependence on God.

4. I JOHN

John, the brother of James and close friend of Jesus, wrote the final 4 books in the Bible. 1 John was written about 90 AD, 25 years after Peter and Paul wrote their last works and were martyred. He complements his readers for “**overcoming the evil one**” (1 John 2:13-14). They didn’t dethrone or destroy Satan, but kept their faith in Christ despite the opposition of the enemy.

John also gives some very helpful advice for us in our warfare today when he tells his readers to “**test the spirits**” (1 John 4:1). When a demon is behind a teaching or philosophy, it will not recognize that Jesus is God who came in the flesh to be the payment for our sins (1 John 4:2-3). We do not have to fear them because God is greater than they are and He lives in us, making us greater than any demon (1 John 4:4-6).

LESSON FOR TODAY: This verse, 1 John 4:4, is one every believer should memorize and use often. Quoting Scripture is our “sword of the Spirit” (Ephesians 6:10-18) and that is how Jesus had victory over Satan’s temptation (Matthew 4:1-11). This is a great verse to counter fear and remind us of where the real power lies!

Along the same line of thought, John reassured those he is writing to that believers are free from the condemnation that sin brings (1 John 5:18; Romans 8:1). That doesn’t mean believers don’t sin, they do – but the sin has been paid for so Satan cannot use it to destroy them as long as they confesses the sin and cleans themselves from it. Even if someone doesn’t do so, Satan still doesn’t have free reign to harm them. When someone is a child of God, Satan and his demons can only do what God allows them to do (Job 1, 2). “Harm” is the Greek word meaning “to assault, in order to sever the vital union between Christ and the believer.” Satan cannot separate us from Christ – nothing can do that for the believer (Romans 8:31-39).

5. REVELATION

The final book in the Bible, Revelation, written by John 6 years after 1 John, has much to say about spiritual warfare as might be expected. In it the battle between God and Satan, which started before the world was created and which included the human race when Adam sinned (Genesis 3:15), comes to a fitting conclusion.

John uses many terms for Satan. He calls him the “devil” (6 times), “evil one” (6 times), “liar and the father of lies” (3 times), “murderer” (1 time), “thief” (1 time), “wolf” (1 time), “deceiver” (1 time), “ruler of this world” (3 times), and “he who is in the world” (1 time).

In addition, John talks about territorial spirits, high ranking demons who oversee control of certain countries or geographical areas. In Revelation they are referred to as a “synagogue of Satan” (Revelation 2:9; 3:9) and “dwelling place of unclean spirits” (Revelation 18:2). They will be the power behind the rise of the nation called Babylon (Revelation 17-18).

LESSONS FOR TODAY: Demons influence and control the nations (Daniel 10:13,20; Ephesians 6:12) and mislead them so they can be destroyed (Isaiah 9:14). It must always be kept in mind, however, that God is in sovereign control. They can do nothing without God’s permission (Job 1:6-12).

Because they cannot get at God or Jesus directly, Satan and demons attack those closest to God today – His children. He focuses his power and leads those he influences to hate and harm believers (Revelation 2:10; 13:7, 14-15; Daniel 12:7).

LESSON FOR TODAY: Satan does all he can to attack God’s people. Sometimes the enemy is permitted to exercise authority over the physical possessions of the child of God (as in Job’s first trial), sometimes over his physical body (as in Job’s second trial and in Paul’s case), and sometimes this authority extends as far as the physical life of the individual is concerned. But usually it is the hand of God which is at work behind the scenes, working to accomplish His own ends, using whatever means He chooses.

Because Revelation records the final, ultimate defeat of Satan and his forces in their battle against God, it is only natural that the first skirmish in that long-standing battle be remembered and everyone reminded of the results. “Now war arose in heaven, Michael and his angels fighting against the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, but they were defeated and there was no longer any place for them in heaven. And the great dragon was thrown down, that ancient serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole

world - he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him” (Revelation 12:7-9; see also Daniel 12:1).

This passage clearly details Satan’s defeat in heaven, sometime in the very beginning, probably before man was created. He was defeated in heaven and this earth became his domain (Ephesians 6:12; John 14:30; 16:11; 12:31). Now in Revelation his defeat on earth is chronicled. It is accomplished by Satan being defeated under the feet of the church (Romans 16:20) and by God’s holy angels (Revelation 20:1-3, 10).

This final defeat will be total and complete. Satan and his forces will be thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone and will be tormented day and night forever and ever (Revelation 20:10). Their defeat will be swift and final. They won’t even be granted the dignity of standing before the throne of God to undergo a personal judgment. His judgment was made complete on the cross. He only awaits the carrying out of that sentence.

With that God’s great promise at the start of this battle in Genesis 3:15 to “crush Satan’s head” will be complete. He will be the victor, and us with Him!

LESSON FOR TODAY: Always remember who the ultimate victor in this battle will be. Our faith is based on that, so is our courage and confidence today. We have nothing to fear. There will be total victory someday. Then we will live in that victory forever. Forever!

ACTS & EPISTLES REFERENCES TO THE SPIRIT WORLD

<u>ACTS</u>	4:8-9	3:6-7	4:1-6
5:3,16	5:19-21	4:1-3	5:18-21
8:7,9-11,18-24		5:9-15	
10:38	<u>EPEHSIANS</u>	<u>2 TIMOTHY</u>	<u>II JOHN</u>
13:6-12	1:21	1:7	1-13
16:16-19	2:2	2:14-26	<u>JUDE</u>
19:12-20	3:10	3:1-17	1:6-9
26:18	4:26,27		
	6:10-20	<u>HEBREWS</u>	<u>REVELATION</u>
<u>ROMANS</u>	<u>COLOSSIANS</u>	2:14-18	2:9-10,13, 24
8:15,38-39	1:13-17	<u>JAMES</u>	3:9
16:20	2:6-15,20	2:19	9:1-21
<u>I CORINTHIANS</u>	<u>I THESSALONIANS</u>	3:13-18	11:7
2:6-8	2:18	4:1-8	12:1-17
5:5-7	3:5	<u>I PETER</u>	13:1-18
7:5		3:22	14:9-11
10:7-21	<u>2 THESSALONGIAN</u>	5:8-11	15:2
<u>II CORINTHIANS</u>	<u>S</u>	<u>2 PETER</u>	16:2,13-16
2:4-11	2:1-12	2:1-22	17:1-18
4:4	3:3	<u>I JOHN</u>	18:1-24
6:14-17 11:3-4,1`2-15	<u>I TIMOTHY</u>	2:12-14,18-23	19:2,20
12:7-10	1:20	3:7-12	20:1-10
<u>GALATIANS</u>	2:14		21:8
1:6-8			22:15

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING.: Answer the following questions. Send the answers to me if you want and I'll offer comments and suggestions.

1. What does James mean when he says we are to "resist" Satan?
2. How are we to do this?
3. Why is 1 John 4:4 such a useful verse in spiritual warfare?
4. What does Revelation say about the future of Satan and demons?
5. How should knowing this affect our daily lives?
6. What are some new truths you have learned from this section about spiritual warfare in Acts and the Epistles?
7. How can these things help you in your own daily life?

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

If you have completed this portion of Spiritual Warfare in the Bible please let me know. I would enjoy knowing what you thought of it, what you learned, and what I can do to improve it. Also let me know if you have any questions or prayer requests. Thanks and may God continue to bless you as you serve Him. Jerry Schmoyer jerry@schmoyer.net

IV. CHURCH HISTORY

A consideration of spiritual warfare through the Bible wouldn't be complete without at least a quick overview of what has transpired in the centuries since the New Testament was written. How others interpreted and applied these passages on spiritual warfare can give us insight and encouragement as well. We can find wisdom and practical suggestions from those who have already fought the battles we are now fighting.

I am indebted to "Can A Christian Have An Unclean Spirit?" Copyright © 1999-2002 by Gary Hal Graff, Christian Services Publishers, for their excellent research into spiritual warfare in church history. This is an excellent, well-written book and worth reading.

A. CHURCH FATHERS (100-500 AD)

Spiritual warfare continued to have a **very important role** in the lives of the early Christians in the first few centuries of the church. Writings that have been preserved from those times speak of believers and unbelievers being demonized (Ignatius, Barnabus, Hermas, Justin Martyr, Irenaeus, Tertullian, Minucius Felix, Hippolytus, Origen, etc.). Deliverance came in response to prayers in Jesus' name. The power of casting out demons was long regarded in the early church as a direct gift still bestowed by the Holy Spirit, apart from any human ordinance. Justin Martyr, Tertullian, Origen and others speak of deliverance as being practiced by laymen, even by soldiers, and women, by means of prayer and invocation of the name of Jesus. Striving to live a life pleasing to God was important to grow in faith and remain free from demonic oppression.

Demonizing was common throughout the Roman Empire and, although many means were tried to bring freedom, few were successful. It soon became evident that Christians had power others did not. God used this to help them gain a hearing and spread their message through the known world.

Justin Martyr (AD 110-165) used this fact when he wrote a formal defense of Christianity to the Roman Senate in AD 150, defending the Christians and petitioning for the awful persecution to stop. He wrote "for numberless demoniacs throughout the whole world, and in your city, many of our Christian men exorcising them in the name of Jesus Christ, who was crucified under Pontius Pilate, have healed and do heal, rendering helpless and driving the possessing devils out of the men, though they could not be cured by all the other exorcists, and those who used incantations and drugs." The only technique mentioned by him is the use of the invocation of the name of Jesus. For the next two centuries following Justin, every Christian writer wrote about the reality of demonizing and of the common practice of Christian deliverance ('exorcism' as they called it) in their days.

LESSON FOR TODAY: It is still true that victory over demonizing is not a complicated process of ritual, special words by 'gifted' persons, emotional church meetings, etc. It is the power of Jesus in each of His children that is greater than Satan's power and which can bring freedom to the oppressed. Of course the access the demons claim must be broken and any open doors closed, but that, too, is done by Jesus' power.

One early church writer, **Minucius Felix** (? - AD 210) wrote that demons suffer pain when subjected to the words and prayers of Christians. The words of truth tormented and burned them.

LESSON FOR TODAY: That is still true today. Touching a person who is demonized, even in tenderness, can bring terrible pain to the demon who is indwelling them. Therefore laying on hands, quoting Scripture and playing praise music all can contribute to a more speedy victory over that which oppresses a demonized person.

As the early church continued to grow and expand despite (or perhaps because of) persecution, Satan was developing another approach that would ultimately prove more successful in slowing the growth and strength of the church – **false teachings**. Many of Paul's writings, especially the letters written towards the end of his ministry, warn against this as it had already started in his day. Slowly but surely, though, teachings from other religions found their way into Christianity. Over the centuries these caused a large segment of the church to develop into what became the Roman Catholic Church of the Middle Ages. This brought in rituals and new teachings about spiritual warfare as well.

Before long church practices that were a means to an end became an end in themselves. The water used for baptism was thought to be invested with special properties instead of just being a way of showing the new birth had occurred. This water then became used in rituals used to bring about deliverance. To become holy water the water itself as well as some salt that was added were both put through a formal ritual of spiritual deliverance to purify them. Then the resulting salted 'holy' water was thought to have power over demonizing.

Spiritual warfare continued to be a theme in the writings and teachings of the church leaders of the time (Clement of Alexandria, Cyprian, Lactanius, Cyril of Jerusalem, Ambrose, John Chrysostom, Jerome, Augustine, John Cassian, etc.). Eventually it was believed that all non-Christians were demonized and therefore had to be exorcised before being baptized and joining the church. The established church then said a new convert had to go through a three year period of preparation called 'catechism' during which they met several times a week for prayer, fasting, spiritual deliverance and instruction.

As the **pre-baptismal spiritual deliverances** were performed, various rituals were also performed simultaneously, such as the signing of the cross, which was also believed to have exorcistic properties. Later, exorcised salt and oil were used too. And since the church by this time had come to believe that unclean spirits lived in water, the baptismal waters themselves had to be exorcised.

Since it was believed that demons entered a person in order to enjoy the lusts of sensual pleasure, the opposite kind of treatment was required to drive them out. Hence, in order to be free from demons, the most useful help was **abstinence, fasting, and suffering of affliction**. They felt the physical sufferings the person experienced would also bring pain to the demons and cause them to want to leave. This developed into extreme forms of self-torture in the name of spirituality and characterized much of the church during the Middle Ages.

Some felt if even this pain wasn't enough, then prayer was called for. "But inasmuch as some, being of a more malignant kind, remain by the body that is undergoing punishment, though they are punished with it, therefore it is needful to have recourse to God by prayers and petitions" (Pseudo-Clementine Literature - A.D. 200-250)

Instead of believing all believers could have victory over demons by Jesus' power in prayer, as the early church had believed, many started feeling that the ability to command

demons to be gone was a special gift given to some believers. Some still believed **every believer had authority to pray** for this in Jesus' name, though. But by the middle of the third century (about AD 250) the order of Exorcist had been added to the church. Now the ability to cast out demons was no longer viewed as a gift bestowed by God but rather as an appointment made by the church. The church, they felt, had the authority to give the ability to remove demonizing to whomever it chose. They felt only those with this bestowal could have authority over demons.

Hilarion (AD 291-371), who lived at this time, was famous throughout the Mediterranean world for his faith and power to work miracles of healing and spiritual deliverance. He gives one case in which a young Christian woman became possessed. A youth of Gaza fell in love with her, but she would have nothing to do with him. So he went off to Memphis to learn the arts of a magician. At the end of a year's instruction, he returned and buried an engraved plate and magical formulas beneath the woman's house. Thereupon the maid began to show signs of insanity, to throw away the covering of her head, tear her hair, gnash her teeth, and loudly call the youth by name. When the maid was brought to Hilarion, the spirit within her began to talk and howl. He asked how it dared to enter into the body of one who belonged to God. The demon claimed to have done so to preserve the virginity of the girl, an idea which seemed a bit outrageous to Hilarion. He then put the girl through the process of "purgation" (spiritual deliverance), and when she was well, he rebuked her for having permitted the spirit to enter into her "by her conduct." Thus he assumed that she was in some way responsible for the spirit's entrance.

Hilarion also believed that it was possible for a spirit to make a Christian sick, and this included the "saints," himself as well. Furthermore, he held another common belief of that day, that it was possible for the saints (particularly the ascetic hermits who lived in the deserts) to be physically attacked and beaten by evil spirits. He claimed that such had happened to him several times.

One of Hilarion's exorcistic techniques was demonstrated in another case. A prominent and wealthy man of Aira (by the Red Sea) who was demonized was brought to him, bound with iron. When the man saw Hilarion, he broke free, grabbed him, and held him mid-air. Hilarion nevertheless cured him by praying for the man's release. In yet another case, an officer of the Emperor Constantius came to Hilarion because he was possessed. From a very early age he had compulsions to groan, howl, and gnash his teeth. The spirit spoke perfectly in foreign languages which the man did not understand. Hilarion cured him with a simple command in the name of Jesus.

Before entering the Middle Ages, let us **summarize** what we have learned about the church fathers. As to the question of whether or not a Christian could have an unclean spirit, the vast majority of early church leaders and believers felt that it could be so. Instead of being something all believers could do, "exorcism" (spiritual deliverance) became an office granted by the Church. Gradually rituals replaced prayers for deliverance in Jesus name. Essentially what happened during the first five centuries is that deliverance from demonizing slowly moved away from its original New Testament forms, setting the stage for the developments of the latter Middle Ages and the Renaissance periods.

B. MIDDLE AGES (500-1300 AD)

Spiritual warfare continued in the time period AD 500-1300 as attested to by Benedict of Nursia, Gregory the Great, and others.

Pope Gregory I (Gregory the Great, AD 540-604) tells us of a priest who became possessed as he attempted to cast a spirit out of a woman. He points out the man was doing the deliverance in his own strength and not in Jesus' power. Pope Gregory notes another case in which a cleric became possessed: "One day two brethren were sent to buy something for the needs of the convent. One was younger and seemed cleverer; the other was older and should have supervised the first. As they went on their way he who should have looked after the younger man committed a larceny, unwittingly, with the money which had been given to them. As soon as they had returned to the convent and on the very threshold of the house of piety, he who had committed the theft fell to the earth, seized by an evil spirit, and suffered great torments. When the evil spirit had left him he was questioned by all the monks who had hastened to the spot; he was asked if he had not misappropriated the money received. He denied it and was tormented a second time. When the evil spirit had again left him he was again questioned but again denied and was once more given over to torment. He denied eight times and eight times was tormented. At the eighth falsehood he confessed the sum of money which he had stolen. He did penance, prostrated himself, admitted his sin and the evil spirit returned no more as soon as he had accomplished the expiation."

Though there are references to a "**Book of Exorcisms**" used by the church in the fifth century, there is no trace of what it contained. However, there is a record of a formula being used by the beginning of the eighth century: "I come against you, most unclean damned spirit; you are grown old in evil, the substance of crimes, the origin of sin; you delight in deceits, sacrileges, defilements, slaughter. Invoking the name of our Lord Jesus Christ we rebuke you and adjure you through his majesty and power, passion and resurrection, advent and judgment, that in whatever part of the members you are hiding, you manifest yourself by your own confession, and that, shaken by spiritual flames and invisible torments, you flee from the vessel that you believe yourself in possession of, leaving it purged for the Lord after having been your dwelling-place. ... Depart, depart, wherever you are, and seek no more to enter bodies dedicated to God. May they be forbidden to you forever, in the name of the Father and Son and Holy Spirit, and in the glory of the Lord's passion, by whose blood they are saved, whose advent they await, whose judgment they confess."

In the first part of the Middle Ages the **possessed were generally treated well**. The techniques of spiritual deliverance of the first five centuries included breathing into a person, readings and word formulas, holy water, signing of the cross, salt, oil, bodily hardships, etc. In time other methods were introduced. These included the use of sanctified ointments, the spittle of the priests, sacred relics, visits to shrines, and concoctions (as, for instance, a mixture of lupin, henbane, bishopswort, garlic, ale, and holy water). Eventually the relics began to be used as tools of deliverance from demonizing with the spirits providing the expected reactions (complaints, aversion, despair, etc.). These, along with the shrines, could be considered as a form of Christian talismans. This practice originated from the suggestion of the spirits themselves and not from the influence of some ancient civilization, as the literature of Babylon. However, this use of concoctions sounds very much like a throwback to the practice of sorcery.

C. RENAISSANCE PERIOD (AD 1300-1500)

As civilization moved out of the dark ages and into a time of awakening, many changes in and out of the church started taking root. However, the mere rebirth of the naturalistic approach did not signal the end of spiritual warfare, which actually continued to be the prevailing school of thought concerning man's maladies for several centuries to come. Indeed, the greatest excesses in the area of spiritual warfare were yet to come.

Prior to the fifteenth century there were two types of demonizing recognized: willing and unwilling. The former referred to the practice of witchcraft, as the participants willingly subjected themselves to temporary demonizing. The latter referred to cases in which the subjects were unwillingly demonized, which was thought to be some sort of divine punishment for sins. However, in the course of time this distinction was dropped so that all cases of demonizing were regarded as being willing, the consequence of practicing witchcraft. All subjects of demonizing were now regarded as witches.

By the **latter part of the fifteenth century**, Europe had sustained several natural disasters, such as storms, floods, and pestilences (the Black Plague, etc.). In reaction, society seized upon the idea that it was witches who had caused these disasters. Before long, witches were also accused of causing the personal problems of individuals. Therefore, to purge the world of this civil menace, Pope Innocent VIII passed legislation in 1484 A.D. to eradicate witchcraft. This launched the witch hunts which soon became the joint effort of Catholics, Protestants, and secularists. These hunts were to last about two centuries. It has been estimated that several hundred thousand people perished in these hunts, many of whom were first tortured. While there must have been some true demonic activity involved in all this witchcraft, most of what happened was an overreaction which took many innocent lives.

Still, there were true cases of demonizing that continued to appear during this time. Here is **a case from the sixteenth century**: "The latter (a girl) was possessed by the demon who often threw her to the ground as if she had the falling sickness. Soon the demon began to speak with her mouth and said things inhuman and marvelous which may not be repeated The girl had always shown herself patient, she had often prayed to God. But when she had called upon the name of Jesus to deliver her, the evil spirit manifested himself anew, he had taken possession of her eyes which he made start out of her head, had twisted her tongue and pulled it more than eight inches out of her mouth, and turned her face towards her back with an expression so pitiful that it would have melted a stone. All the priests of the place and from round about came and spoke to her, but the devil replied to them with a contempt which exceeded all bounds, and when he was questioned about Jesus he made a reply of such derision that it cannot be set down."

Epidemics of demonizing have broken out in various times and places throughout the world. The Renaissance period had more than its fair share of them. These outbreaks might involve only a handful of people or entire masses, spreading through towns, cities, and even regions. Some were among unbelievers, others among believers. One example of what happened in the middle ages is found in a 1916 East African outbreak. That form of demonizing is called the "mpepo sickness" and effected only women. In the mpepo state the women were found speaking in unlearned languages, such as English or Swaheli, and in deep bass voices. They also exhibited compulsions for food and pepper, and for bright clothing. When requested, a demonizing spirit would relate its life story using "the most filthy language;" then the subject would fall into a rage, and then into convulsions. When the drums were played the possessed would dance in a "wild and terrifying manner" until exhausted. An outbreak of

this type could spread throughout entire regions. Christian natives were not only immune but could cure some of the possessed by their “words,” by prayer, and by having the subjects lead a “sober” lifestyle.

During this period the world witnessed the **spread of sadistic techniques of spiritual deliverance**, such as torture and execution, which were formerly applied to individuals who were demonized, but now were applied to large numbers of mostly normal people in the general populace. Beyond this it appears that Medieval methods continued to be used, although a few new methods were introduced. The use of drugs to move the bowels and thus produce deliverance essentially epitomizes the depths of degeneration to which Christian deliverance fell during this period.

LESSON FOR TODAY: When man turns from God’s Word as the only authority and source of truth he turns to superstitions, rituals and external actions instead. These have no power to deliver; in fact they open the door even more to demons because of the fear behind them and because of the rejection of Jesus as our protector and deliverer. Follow only God’s Word. Do only what He leads through His Word. There are no ‘magic’ rituals, special words or prayers or even group activities that replace His power. Deliverance can come in the midst of a highly emotional church service, but it can come just as quickly in a quiet moment of private prayer. Externals don’t assure deliverance, praying in God’s will to Jesus is the only way.

D. REFORMATION PERIOD (1500-1700 AD)

The original Reformers were split over the topic of whether or not a Christian could have an unclean spirit, with Luther siding with the traditional theory that they could and Calvin rejecting the possibility.

Martin Luther (AD 1483 – 1546) believed that lunacy, idiocy, and insanity were caused by the “possession of devils”. He also believed that dumbness, deafness, lameness, pestilence, fever, and other serious illnesses were also caused by these spirits. Once Luther’s students asked him specifically if Christians were subject to witchcraft. It was asked: “Can good Christians and God-fearing people also undergo witchcraft?” Luther replied: “Yes, for our bodies are always exposed to the attacks of Satan. The maladies I suffer are not natural, but devil’s spells.” However, he tempered this belief with the idea that such could not happen without divine permission, and cited the case of Job.

When Luther related his belief that Christians were not exempt from the attacks of the enemy, he spoke from personal experience. As intimated above, he himself was often severely attacked emotionally, spiritually and physically. He also suffered from severe bouts of depression. “He [the devil] vexes me often so powerfully, and assaults me so fiercely with heavy and melancholy thoughts, that I forget my loving Lord and Savior Christ Jesus, or at least behold Him far otherwise than He is to be beheld.”

Luther wrote: “We cannot expel demons with certain ceremonies and words, as Jesus Christ, the prophets, and the apostles did. All we can do is, in the name of Jesus Christ, to pray the Lord God, of his infinite mercy, to deliver the possessed persons. And if our prayer is offered up in full faith, we are assured by Christ himself (John 16:23), that it will be efficacious, and overcome all the devil’s resistance. I might mention many instances of this. But we cannot of ourselves expel the evil spirits, nor must we even attempt it.”

One clergyman, Andrew Ebert of Frankfurt, wrote to Luther in 1536, asking how to exorcise a girl who had long been mentally ill. For a while, she appeared to be getting better, but then suddenly got worse. She was seen chewing up and swallowing coins, and also spoke a dialect of German she had not previously known. A Catholic priest came to town and tried to cast out the spirit using herbs, holy water, and ritual commands, but failed. Luther wrote back advising prayer for the girl, but warned against using rituals and commands, since the spirits laugh at and scorn the use of these methods. He also warned of being deceived by trickery and fraud, claiming to have run into many such cases. So he advised an inspection of the coins that were supposedly being eaten.

John Calvin (AD 1509 – 1564) accepted most of the popular beliefs concerning spiritual warfare, as the belief in the existence of demonizing, and of the physical power of the devil (but only towards those who had given themselves over to him). He also accepted the common Protestant belief that the Catholics were under the power of the devil. Among his labors, he sought to defend the belief in the existence of good and evil spirits which the secularists were trying to deny.

As to **how they brought about deliverance**, the Lutherans used only prayer, while the Calvinists used nothing at all.

E. ENLIGHTENMENT PERIOD (AD 1700-1800)

The Enlightenment was a movement of the eighteenth century in which reason was further exalted as the solution to all man's problems. It was also marked by a skepticism of anything that the mind of man could not understand. This belief has grown and spread until it finds far-reaching acceptance even today. But God had His own movement during the Enlightenment period, springing from the Church of England through the ministries of the Wesley's, which came to be known as the Methodist movement. This revival was marked by spontaneous demonstrations of the power of God.

John Wesley (AD 1703 – 1791) lived at a time when the laws against witchcraft were being repealed. In 1768 he publicly opposed such changes, stating that to give up the prosecution of witchcraft was like giving up the Bible. During the powerful revival meetings of the Wesley's, miracles of healings and of spiritual deliverance occurred spontaneously. Thus John Wesley held that the age of miracles had not entirely come to an end. He debated this issue with literary opponents, challenging them to prove either by scripture or by reason that such an age was over.

Wesley had enemies who opposed him and his movement, most of whom were Catholics. But as it happened, several of these became demonized as they spoke out against him. This is an example of God allowing a person to be demonized as a judgment of God. They opened the door by rejecting God's truth and attacking God's people. When it came to the casting out of spirits, Wesley agreed with Luther in using only prayer, avoiding rituals and ritualized commands.

In another letter of November, 1762, John Wesley speaks of this policy: "The short of the case is this. Two young women were tormented of the devil in an uncommon manner. Several serious persons desired my brother and me to pray with them. We, with many others did; and they were delivered. But where meantime were 'the exorcisms in form, according to the Roman fashion'? I never used them; I never saw them; I know nothing about them."

Wesley believed that sickness and misfortune could be caused by evil spirits. He attributed nearly all accidents as well as calamities of nature to the devil. The only difference between his view and that of Luther's is that his does not seem to attribute all sickness and misfortune to the enemy, but mixes in with it the element of natural occurrence. He believed Christians could be possessed as well. Of course, this could only happen by "divine permission." Epilepsy was often the result of demonizing. He gives several cases of such disease, where the afflicted person believed that he or she was possessed by an evil spirit, and who were partially or completely cured by spiritual deliverance.

It is clear from several cases of Wesley's writings that he believed that Christians were subject to the attacks of the enemy and that they could even have unclean spirits within them. Here is one. "A ten year old Christian girl, named Elizabeth Booth, experienced pain in the chest for three days. Every successive day thereafter she experienced some kind of fit or spell, such as a fit of rage, or a fit of violent laughter, or a spell of being 'stretched out and stiff as a carcass.' These spells usually lasted about an hour, and then ended as abruptly as they began. In the intervals she would be 'in great heaviness of soul,' and would pray and plead for God's mercy. If her faith increased, so did her fits. Often she would go into one of these fits right in the middle of her 'rejoicing and praising [of] God.' A couple of months later she grew worse, often trying to throw herself out a window or into a fire. She was especially enraged against both the Bible and Wesley, and often told of his whereabouts, even though he was not present. But still in the intervals, she would break out into 'vehement prayer.' Then the spirit began to speak through her. She also started having visions, as of heaven, of hell, or of the future. But three months later all the symptoms disappeared spontaneously and did not return."

The change of the tide (16th-19th centuries)

As we know, the attributing of all human ailments to Satan and demons did not retain its position of prominence in the West. Eventually, the tide changed, with spiritual warfare losing popularity, and the naturalistic interpretation coming in. But this whole process took three or four centuries.

The Catholic Church had been sustaining harsh criticism from the Protestants and the secularists for many of its practices. This led to a movement in the church known as the Counter-Reformation. One thing it produced was the Roman Ritual (1614) which was a manual of authorized church "exorcism". Besides being a guide for priests as to how to perform "exorcism", the Ritual was also a guide to determine whether a state of demonizing existed. For instance, to be classed as possessed, a subject had to be able to speak in unlearned languages and display clairvoyant and other ESP powers.

Another product of the Counter-Reformation was that several local, diocesan, and provincial synods forbade the use of "exorcism" without the express permission of the local bishop (as the Church of England had done). These latest developments greatly reduced the use of spiritual deliverance in the Catholic Church. However, the Jesuits of England continued to practice deliverance without much change (as did their counter-parts, the Puritans of England).

Spiritual warfare becomes the minority view in the 18th and 19th centuries. As a result of prominent voices speaking out against spiritual warfare, and of various churches moving against or limiting the use of spiritual deliverance, and of the great advances in the naturalistic sciences, spiritual warfare gradually lost ground and became the minority view. The tide had now changed from supernaturalism to secularism.

F. 19TH CENTURY (1800-1900 AD)

During the 19th century there was not much emphasis on spiritual warfare. Other causes were found for such problems, making them more of a natural instead of supernatural order. Justinus Kerner (AD 1786 – 1862), however speaks of Christians who were possessed for various amounts of time and showed times of normalcy but also times of extreme perversion and oppression. Many in the Catholic church were also becoming demonized. Some were delivered others went to mental hospitals where they gradually found relief.

G. 20TH CENTURY (1900-2000 AD)

1. “EXORCISM” IN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH

Today, with proper authorization, “exorcism” may be practiced for Roman Catholic Church members, non-Catholics, and those who have been excommunicated. Also, the tradition of “baptismal exorcism” has been retained, but the exorcism of salt and water was discontinued in 1969. So we see that the Catholic Church has not only maintained its traditional practice of exorcism, but also its belief that a Christian can have an unclean spirit.

However, Catholic exorcism of the possessed has become more theory than reality, simply because nowadays demonizing is rarely recognized. Demonizing is not recognized unless the subject speaks in unlearned languages and displays clairvoyant or other ESP powers. Modern Catholics admit that according to this definition few if any of the New Testament cases of demonizing would have been recognized as such. So the Church awaits the formation of a more practical definition. As a result, all disturbed people are sent to the psychiatrists, not the exorcists.

Today the Church’s exorcism continues to be governed by the Roman Ritual even though it was formulated in 1614. The exorcism itself is about seven pages long, consisting of prayers, scripture readings, responses, ritual commands, mini-sermons, signings of the cross, and the use of holy water. If in its recitation, progress is being made, priests are encouraged to continue repeating the ceremony for as long as it takes to cast out the spirit, for several hours or more, if necessary. Just as exorcism has become rare in the Catholic Church, so has the exorcist.

2. DELIVERANCE IN EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH

The Eastern Orthodox Church (comprised of the Greek Orthodox, the Russian Orthodox, and the Orthodox churches of the other Eastern European countries) is, of course, very similar to the Roman Catholic Church in most forms, including the practice of deliverance of those who are demonized. Thus it still believes in the reality of demonizing and in the practice of spiritual deliverance of baptismal candidates. It has its own manual of authorized spiritual deliverance contained in the Assemani. This manual contains twenty-one forms of “exorcism” for various occasions. However, the Church differs from the Catholics in that it has retained the office of the exorcist.

3. DELIVERANCE IN THE PROTESTANT CHURCHES

In most Protestant churches of modern times spiritual deliverance is not practiced. Not only do most deny the existence of spiritual warfare, but many also deny the existence of demons and some even the existence of Satan himself. When it comes to the treatment of disturbed people, most Protestants churches send them to psychiatrists, as do the Catholics. Thus all mental illness is interpreted psychologically.

However, there are a few Protestant churches or groups which have retained the spiritual interpretation of mental illness. One is the Anglican Church (the Church of England), whose beliefs concerning spiritual warfare (and most other topics) are very similar to the Catholics. Besides this church, there are local churches within charismatic or Pentecostal denominations which have rediscovered the Biblical beliefs and practices about spiritual warfare and spiritual deliverance. More and more non-charismatic evangelical churches are working in the area of deliverance, but they are still a small percentage.

Thus in the twentieth century we could say that Christian spiritual warfare and deliverance still exist, but just barely. There are many encouraging signs, though, that more and more evangelical Christians and churches are learning what the Bible teaches about spiritual warfare.

The twenty-first century will see an upsurge in intensity and frequency with which spiritual warfare is practiced. This will be greatly needed, for the attacks of the enemy are becoming greater in number and strength as well. It will get much worse before it gets better. As the return of Jesus gets closer so warfare will increase. We must be trained, equipped and prepared.

The rest of this story has yet to be written, but the end is quite clear as we see in the book of Revelation. God wins (He already has)!

SPIRITUAL WARFARE TRAINING. At the end of each major section in this paper you will find questions to help you remember and apply what you have learned. You can look back through what you have read for the answers if need be. You need a Bible, a notebook and a pen to do these questions.

If you want to send me your answers I would be glad to read them and offer comments or suggestions that might help you. You can write me at jerry@schmoyer.net. If you have any questions or prayer requests please feel free to write to me.

1. What are some of the Biblical ways Christians throughout history have conducted spiritual warfare?
2. What can you learn and apply from what they did?
3. What are some of the unbiblical ways Christians throughout history have conducted spiritual warfare?
4. What must you avoid in your spiritual warfare?

QUESTIONS AND COMMENTS

Record your thoughts, questions, what you have learned, what you want to study in the future, prayer suggestions and whatever else you want to remember.

If you have completed this portion of Spiritual Warfare in the Bible please let me know. I would enjoy knowing what you thought of it, what you learned, and what I can do to improve it. Also let me know if you have any questions or prayer requests. Thanks and may God continue to bless you as you serve Him. Jerry Schmoyer jerry@schmoyer.net

ALPHABETICAL INDEX OF SUBJECTS COVERED

400 silent years sp warfare p 31
100-500 AD sp warfare p 109-111
500-1300 AD sp warfare p 112
1300-1500 AD sp warfare p 113-114
1500-1700 AD sp warfare p 114-115
1700-1800 AD sp warfare p 115-116
1800-1900 AD sp warfare p 117
1900-2000 AD sp warfare p 117-118

Abaddon p 87
Able & Cain p 6
Abraham p 11
Abyss and demons p 46
Adam & Eve p 3
Adopted children & demonizing p 50
All things work for good p 26, 65
Amalek p 13
Ananias & Sapphira p 64-65
Ancestral access p 15, 43, 91
Angel of light p 87
Angels assigned to us p 22
Angels created p 2
Angels fight for believers p 26
Angels protect believers p 26
Angels sin p 2
Anger & violence, symptoms p 41
Anger a foothold for demons p 88-89
Animals, demons indwell p 45
Anoint home with oil p 43-44
Anoint with oil, healing p 55-58
Apollyon p 87
Armor for sp warfare p 90-101
Armor of God prayer for p 99-100
Artemis worship p 71-75
Athens, sp warfare at p 71
Attacks, different each time p 19
Authority for us today p 48-49, 70-71
Authority to bind & loose p 53
Authority, used by Paul p 70

Babel & Nimrod p 8
Babylon's influence p 28-29
Baptism in the Spirit, truth about p 80
Baptism of Jesus p 32
Bar-Jesus p 69

Battle isn't constant, never ends p 20
Beelzebul p 87
Believers can be demonized p 36
Believers, demon's work against p 78
Believers, power over demons p 88
Believers, power over Satan p 86
Believers, Satan's work against p 77
Belt of truth p 93
Belt of truth, prayer for p 99-100
Bible verses to use in sp warfare p 96-98
Bible, how to use p 96-98
Bible, quote for victory p 91-92
Bible, Sword of the Spirit p 96-98
Bind & loosing p 53
Birth of Jesus p 31
Blessings, must fight for p 18
Blind to spiritual things p 82-83
Blood, demons love p 25-26
Breastplate of righteousness p 92-93
Breastplate, prayer for p 99-100

Cain and Able p 6
Calvin, John & sp warfare p 115
Captivity of Judah p 27-29
Catholic Church & sp warfare p 116-117
Causes of demonizing p 42-45
Child sacrifice p 27
Children & demonizing p 50
Christian music p 22
Church discipline p 102
Church fathers and sp warfare p 109-111
Command demons to be gone p 37-38
Compromise is sin p 26
Contacting demons forbidden p 14
Continual, warfare isn't p 20
Control, lack of, symptom p 41
Controlled by Holy Spirit p 40
Converse with demons, no p 37
Corinth, sp warfare at p 71, 78-85
Corinth, tongues at p 80
Counterfeit healings p 56
Counterfeit, by demons p 75-76
Creation p 1
Cross, Satan defeated p 58-59
Curses, demonic openings p 44-45
Curses broken by Jesus p 75-76

Daniel p 28-29
 Darkness & death, symptoms p 41
 Darkness, demons and p 25-26, 83-84
 David p 23-24
 Death & darkness, symptoms p 41
 Deceit, weapon of Satan p 19
 Deception by Satan p 4, 102-103
 Defeat, of Satan p 26-27, 58-59
 Deliverance and healing p 55-58
 Deliverance failure p 50-51
 Deliverance in Acts p 67
 Deliverance, different methods p 52
 Deliverance, slow or none p 51
 Demon rules other demons p 90
 Demon's work against believers 78
 Demonic possession/oppression p 35
 Demonizing & children p 50
 Demonizing defined p p 35
 Demonizing of believers p 36
 Demonizing symptoms p 41-42
 Demonizing, openings p 42-45
 Demons organization p 27-28, 36-37, 90
 Demons purpose, goal p 77-78
 Demons where go when cast out? p 39
 Demons work together p 73
 Demons, don't talk with p 37
 Demons, want to indwell something p 45
 Demons, where dwell p 45-46
 Devil, name for Satan p 87
 Diana worship p 71-75
 Differences among ministries p 52
 Different ways of deliverance p 52
 Discipleship, test of p 38
 Discipline by God p 78-79
 Discipline, church p 102
 Distinguishing between spirits p 65
 Door to demonizing, close p 92-93
 Dragon, Satan as p 87

Early church and sp warfare p 109-111
 Eastern Orthodox & sp warfare 117
 Elijah p 25
 Elymas p 69
 Emotions and feelings p 84-85
 Emotions, control them p 4
 End, none to battles p 20
 Enlightenment period & sp war p 115-116

Ephesus, Ephesians about p 86-89
 Ephesus, Paul at p 71-75
 Epilepsy & demonizing p 51
 Epistles p 75-103
 Evangelical churches & sp warfare p 118
 Exodus from Egypt p 12-16

Failure in deliverance p 50-51
 Failures, learn from p 50-51
 Faith antidote for fear p 28-29
 Faith brings healing? p 57
 Faith lack of brings defeat p 16
 Faith Satan attacks it p 103-104
 Faith shield of p 95-96
 Faith shield, prayer for p 99-100
 Fall, of angels p 2
 Fall, of man p 2
 Family line sin p 15
 Family, attacks us p 53-54
 Fasting & sp warfare p 33
 Fasting in early church p 110
 Fear as a tool of Satan p 20, 28-29, 65
 Fear countering it p 69
 Fear leads to failure p 16
 Fear not from God p 85-86
 Feelings and emotions p 84-85
 Filled with Holy Spirit p 40, 79
 First born males p 15
 Forgiveness, importance of p 82
 Free will choice, always have p 1, 3, 45
 Free will, angels p 2-3
 Free will, demons can't control p 41
 Friends, attack us p 53-54

Gadarenes demonic p 41-46
 Generational access p 15, 43, 91
 Genesis thru Joshua summary p 18
 Giants, Joshua & us battle p 20
 Gift of distinguishing spirits p 65
 Gift of healing today? p 57-58
 Gnosticism p 102
 Goal of Satan p 76-77
 Goal purpose of demons p 77-78
 God of this world/age p 87
 God sovereign over Satan p 9
 Good out of bad p 65, 67, 74

Handkerchief of Paul heal p 72-73
 Hands, laying on p 54-55
 Healing and deliverance p 55-58
 Healing, counterfeit p 56
 Healing for today? p 57-58
 Healing in Acts p 67
 Heavenly language, tongues as p 81
 Hebrews p 105
 Hedge of protection, pray for p 95-96
 Helmet of salvation p 91-92
 Helmet of salvation, prayer for p 99-100
 Holy Spirit essential p 63
 Holy Spirit, filled with p 79
 Home location, opening p 43-44
 Home, cleansing p 43-44
 Hurt leads to anger p 88-89
 Husband, bring down wife p 53-54

Illness and deliverance p 55-58
 Illness, Satan can cause p 72
 Isaac p 11-12
 Israel p 25-28

Jacob p 11-12
 James writings p 104-105
 Jannes & Jambrees p 12
 Jeremiah p 27-28
 Jericho battle p 19
 Jesus example of sp warfare p 59-60
 Jesus methods of deliverance p 37-38
 Jesus & sp warfare p 31-60
 Job and Satan p 8-9
 John Calvin & sp warfare p 115
 John Wesley & sp warfare p 115-116
 John's writings p 105-107
 Jordan River crossing p 18
 Joseph p 11-12
 Joshua p 18-21
 Judah p 25-30
 Judas Satanized p 54, 58
 Jude p 105
 Judges p 21-22

Kingdom of Heaven parables p 40

Law 1p 4

Laying on of hands p 54-55
 Lies of Satan p 102-103
 Light drive out demons p 43-44
 Location of home, opening p 43-44
 Loose & binding p 53
 Lucifer, name of Satan p 87
 Luther, Martin & sp warfare p 114-115

Magic p 73-75
 Magus, Simon p 68
 Man created p 2
 Manifestations, forbid them p 37
 Martin Luther & sp warfare p 114-115
 Martyr, Justin, sp warfare p 109
 Mate, attacks us p 53-54
 Material things that allow access p 94-95
 Medium, in Philippi p 70-71
 Memorize 1 John 4:4 p 106
 Methods of deliverance by Jesus p 37-38
 Middle Ages & sp warfare p 112
 Mind attacked p 91
 Mind thoughts from demon or us? p 42
 Mind thoughts in/out by demons p 40, 42
 Mind victory over thoughts p 91-92
 Mind where sin starts p 3
 Miracles today? p 57
 Moses p 12-16
 Music, Christian, demons hate p 22, 43-44

Names of Satan p 87-88
 New Testament and spiritual warfare p 61
 Nimrod & Babel p 8
 Noah p 6-7

Object that allows demons access p 94-95
 Oil, anoint home with p 43-44
 Oil, anoint with for healing p 55-58
 Old Testament lessons for us p 16
 Openings for demonizing p 42-45
 Organization of demons p 27-28, 36-37, 90
 Orthodox, Eastern & sp warfare p 117
 Others, used to attack us p 53-54
 Ouija board p 14

Pain leads to anger p 88-89
 Pain, demons love p 25-26
 Pain, symptom p 41-42

Parables of the Kingdom p 40
 Paul's demonizing p 85
 Peace, sandals of p 93-94
 Peace, sandals, prayer for p 99-100
 Pentecost p 63
 Persecution used by God p 63
 Peter in Acts p 66-67
 Peter's writings p 103-104
 Philippi, sp warfare in p 70-71
 Possessions, allow access p 43-44, 94-95
 Power encounters p 71-75
 Power for us today p 48-49, 70-71
 Power, used by Paul p 70
 Pray for hedge of protection p 95-96
 Pray without ceasing p 13
 Prayer for deliverance p 46
 Prayer for the armor of God p 99-100
 Prayer language and tongues p 81
 Prayer, importance of p 28, 98
 Prayer, part of the armor p 98
 Pregnancy, unwanted p 40
 Pride used by Satan p 34, 64, 102
 Private prayer language & tongues p 81
 Promises from the Bible to use p 96-98
 Property, opening p 43-44
 Protestant churches & sp warfare p 118
 Public commitment p 32
 Purpose of demons p 77-78
 Purpose of Satan p 76-77
 Python spirit p 70-71

Rage from demonizing p 23

Reformation & sp warfare p 114-115
 Renaissance & Sp warfare p 113-114
 Resist Satan p 104-105
 Resurrection defeated Satan p 59
 Retests p 20
 Righteousness, breastplate of p 92-93
 Righteousness, breastplate, prayer p 99-100
 Rituals fail p 21, 29, 38, 51, 74, 111, 114, 115
 Roman Catholic Ch & sp war p 116-117
 Romans 8:28 p 26, 65
 Ruler in a demonized person p 90

Sacrifice, children p 27

Salvation, helmet of p 91-92
 Sandals of peace p 93-94
 Sandals of peace prayer p 99-100

Sapphira & Ananias p 64-65
 Satan defeated foe p 58-59
 Satan knows his defeat p 26-27
 Satan needs God's permission p 9
 Satan not behind all tempt, problems p 90
 Satan, meaning of name p 88
 Satan, names of p 87-88
 Satan's organization p 90
 Satan's purpose, goal p 76-77
 Satan's work against believers 77
 Saul p 22-23
 Sceva, sons of p 73
 Schemes of Satan p 82
 Scripture, quote for victory p 34, 91-92
 Seed of the woman p 4
 Self-destruction, symptom p 41-42
 Sensuality, symptom p 42
 Serpent, Satan as p 88
 Sex & demonizing p 7
 Sexual perversion, symptom p 42
 Sexual union causes oneness p 79
 Shield of faith p 95-96
 Shield of faith, prayer for p 99-100
 Sickness and deliverance p 55-58
 Silent years p 31
 Simon Magus p 68
 Sin angels fall p 2
 Sin as compromise p 26
 Sin can't allow in life p 14
 Sin defined p 2-3, 33
 Sin in family line, opening p 43
 Sin in Genesis 3:7 p 6
 Sin man falls p 2
 Sin opening for demonizing p 22, 42-43
 Sin starts in the mind p 3
 Slow deliverance p 51
 Solomon p 24
 Sorcery p 68, 73-75
 Sorcery books burned p 73-75
 Speak, don't let demons p 3
 Speaking in tongues p 79-82
 Speaking to demons forbidden p 14
 Spirit baptism, what is really is p 80
 Spirit, Holy, essential p 63
 Spiritual warfare Bible promises p 96-98
 Spiritual warfare ignorance p 82
 Spiritual world view p 67
 Steps to demonizing p 22-23
 Strong Man p 27-28

Suffering, demons love it p 25-26
 Suffering, why God allow p 9
 Suicidal thoughts p 42
 Symptoms of demonizing p 41-42
 Sword of the Spirit p 96-98
 Sword of the Spirit, prayer for p 99-100
 Symptoms of demonizing p 41-42

Talk with demons, no p 37
 Temptation p 33
 Temptation of Jesus p 32-35
 Ten Commandments p 15
 Tests, life series of p 11
 Thorn in the flesh p 85
 Thoughts attacked p 91
 Thoughts behind curses p 44-45
 Thoughts demons or us? p 42
 Thoughts in, out by demons p 40
 Thoughts into mind, symptom p 42
 Thoughts suicide p 42
 Thoughts victory over p 84-85, 91-92
 Tongues, speaking in p 79-82
 Tower of Babel p 8
 Trials, why God allow p 9
 Trust antidote for fear p 28-29
 Truth antidote to fear p 86
 Truth belt of p 93
 Truth belt of, prayer for p 99-100
 Truth demons snatch away p 40
 Truth of God, importance of knowing p 93
 Truth over emotions p 4

Unbelievers, are all demonized? p 83
 Unforgiveness, opening to demonizing p 82

Violence & anger, symptoms p 41
 Violence from demonizing p 23

War, Satan attacks God's soldiers p 95
 Warfare isn't continual, never ends p 20
 Warfare, we are in p vi, 90-91
 Wesley, John & sp warfare p 115-116
 Wife, bring down husband p 53-54
 Word of God, Satan attacks p 3
 Word of God. Sword of the Spirit p 96-98
 Word, how to use p 96-98
 World view, spiritual p 67

BIBLE VERSES - BIBLE ORDER

Genesis 11 – 24 p 11
 Genesis 1:27 – 2:7 p 2
 Genesis 3:1-7 p 6-7
 Genesis 3:8-15 p 5
 Genesis 4:1-8 p 6
 Genesis 6:1-8 p 6-7
 Genesis 11:1-9 p 7-8
 Genesis 25-50 p 11-12

 Exodus p 12-16

 Joshua p 18-21

 Judges p 21-22

 1 Samuel p 1-15
 1 Samuel 16 – 1 Kings 2 p 23-24

 1 Kings 2 – 11 p 24
 1 Kings 12 – 2 Kings 24 p 25-26

 2 Kings 25 p 27-28

 Ezra p 29

 Nehemiah p 29

 Job 1:6-12; 2:1-7 p 8-9
 Job 38:6-7 p 2

 Isaiah 14:12-15 p 2

 Jeremiah p 27-28

 Ezekiel 28:15-17 p 2

 Daniel p 28-29

 Matthew 1-2 p 31
 Matthew 3:1-17 p 31
 Matthew 4:1-11 p 32-35
 Matthew 8:15 p 54-55
 Matthew 8:28-34 p 41-46
 Matthew 12:43-45 p 38
 Matthew 13:1-15 p 40
 Matthew 15:21-28 p 59
 Matthew 16:13-19 p 53
 Matthew 16:21-23 p 53-54
 Matthew 17:14-19 p 50-51

 Mark 1:21-28 p 35-38
 Mark 4:3-34 p 40
 Mark 5:1-20 p 41-46
 Mark 7:24-30 p 50
 Mark 8:27-29 p 53

Mark 8:31 p 53-54
 Mark 9:14-29 p 50-51
 Mark 9:38-40 p 52
 Luke 1-2 p 31

 Luke 4:29 p 54-55
 Luke 4:31-37 p 35-38
 Luke 8:4-13 p 40
 Luke 8:26-37 p 41-46
 Luke 9:1 p 48-49
 Luke 9:18-20 p 53
 Luke 9:22-27 p 53-54
 Luke 9:37-45 p 50-51
 Luke 9:49-50 p 52
 Luke 10:1, 17-19 p 48-49
 Luke 13:10-17 p 54-55
 Luke 13:11-23 p 54-55
 Luke 22:3-4 p 58

 John 6:70 p 54
 John 11:23-31 p 58
 John 16:7-11 p 58

 Acts p 61-62
 Acts 2 and tongues p 80
 Acts 5 p 64-65
 Acts 8 p 68
 Acts 8 and tongues p 80
 Acts 8:1-8 p 66
 Acts 10 and tongues p 80
 Acts 13 p 69
 Acts 1-4 p 63
 Acts 16:16-18 p 70-71
 Acts 17 p 71
 Acts 19 p 71-75
 Acts 19 and tongues p 80

 Romans p 85-86
 Romans 8:28 p 26, 65

 1 Corinthians p 78-82
 1 Corinthians 10:1-13 p 17

 2 Corinthians p 82-85
 2 Corinthians 12:7-10 p 85

 Galatians p 75-76

 Ephesians p 86-89
 Ephesians 1:4 p 1
 Ephesians 6:14-18 p 90-

 Colossians p 102

1 Thessalonians p 76-78
 2 Thessalonians p 78

 1 Timothy p 102-103
 2 Timothy p 103

 Hebrews p 105
 Hebrews 2:14-15 p 58-59

 James p 104-105
 James 4:7, resist Satan, p 104-105

 1 Peter p 103-104
 2 Peter p 104

 1 John p 105-106
 1 John 4:1 test the spirits p 105-106
 1 John 4:4 God greater p 104-105

 Jude p 105
 Revelation p 106-107

BIBLE VERSES - ALPHABETICAL

1 Corinthians p 78-82
 1 Corinthians 10:1-13 p 17
 1 John p 105-106
 1 John 4:1 test the spirits p 105-106
 1 John 4:4 God greater p 104-105
 1 Kings 2 – 11 p 24
 1 Kings 12 – 2 Kings 24 p 25-26
 1 Peter p 103-104
 1 Samuel p 1-15
 1 Samuel 16 – 1 Kings 2 p 23-24
 1 Thessalonians p 76-78
 1 Timothy p 102-103

 2 Corinthians p 82-85
 2 Corinthians 12:7-10 p 85
 2 Kings 25 p 27-28
 2 Peter p 104
 2 Thessalonians p 78
 2 Timothy p 103

 Acts p 61-62
 Acts 2 and tongues p 80
 Acts 5 p 64-65
 Acts 8 p 68
 Acts 8 and tongues p 80
 Acts 8:1-8 p 66

Acts 10 and tongues p 80
Acts 13 p 69
Acts 1-4 p 63
Acts 16:16-18 p 70-71
Acts 17 p 71
Acts 19 p 71-75
Acts 19 and tongues p 80

Colossians p 102

Daniel p 28-29

Ephesians p 86-89

Ephesians 1:4 p 1

Ephesians 6:14-18 p 90-

Exodus p 12-16

Ezekiel 28:15-17 p 2

Ezra p 29

Galatians p 75-76

Genesis 11 – 24 p 11

Genesis 1:27 – 2:7 p 2

Genesis 3:1-7 p 6-7

Genesis 3:8-15 p 5

Genesis 4:1-8 p 6

Genesis 6:1-8 p 6-7

Genesis 11:1-9 p 7-8

Genesis 25-50 p 11-12

Hebrews p 105

Hebrews 2:14-15 p 58-59

Isaiah 14:12-15 p 2

James p 104-105

James 4:7, resist Satan, p 104-105

Jeremiah p 27-28

Job 1:6-12; 2:1-7 p 8-9

Job 38:6-7 p 2

John 6:70 p 54

John 11:23-31 p 58

John 16:7-11 p 58

Joshua p 18-21

Jude p 105

Judges p 21-22

Luke 1-2 p 31

Luke 4:29 p 54-55

Luke 4:31-37 p 35-38

Luke 8:4-13 p 40

Luke 8:26-37 p 41-46

Luke 9:1 p 48-49

Luke 9:18-20 p 53

Luke 9:22-27 p 53-54

Luke 9:37-45 p 50-51

Luke 9:49-50 p 52

Luke 10:1, 17-19 p 48-49

Luke 13:10-17 p 54-55

Luke 13:11-23 p 54-55

Luke 22:3-4 p 58

Mark 1:21-28 p 35-38

Mark 4:3-34 p 40

Mark 5:1-20 p 41-46

Mark 7:24-30 p 50

Mark 8:27-29 p 53

Mark 8:31 p 53-54

Mark 9:14-29 p 50-51

Mark 9:38-40 p 52

Matthew 1-2 p 31

Matthew 3:1-17 p 31

Matthew 4:1-11 p 32-35

Matthew 8:15 p 54-55

Matthew 8:28-34 p 41-46

Matthew 12:43-45 p 38

Matthew 13:1-15 p 40

Matthew 15:21-28 p 59

Matthew 16:13-19 p 53

Matthew 16:21-23 p 53-54

Matthew 17:14-19 p 50-51

Nehemiah p 29

Revelation p 106-107

Romans p 85-86

Romans 8:28 p 26, 65